This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

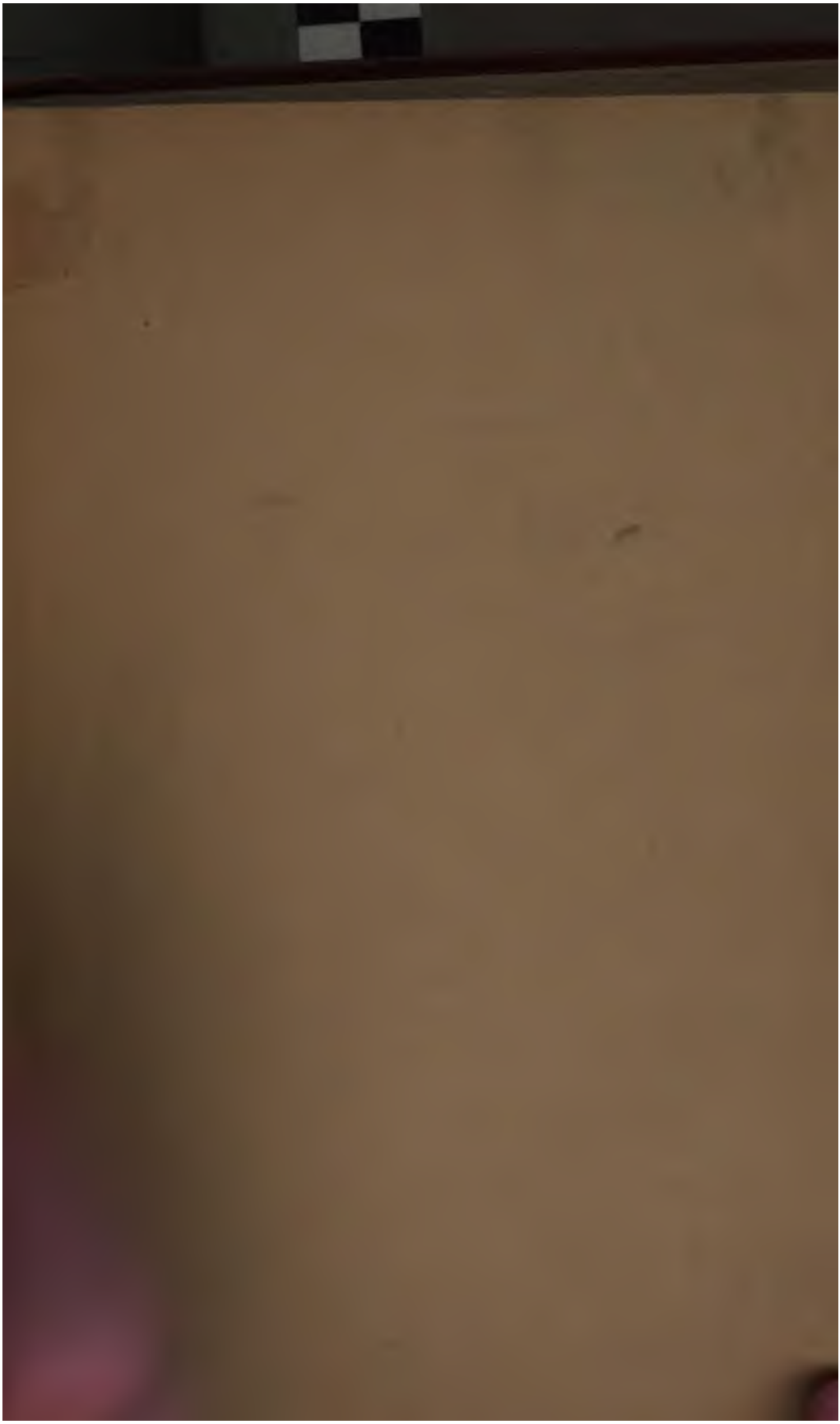
About Google Book Search

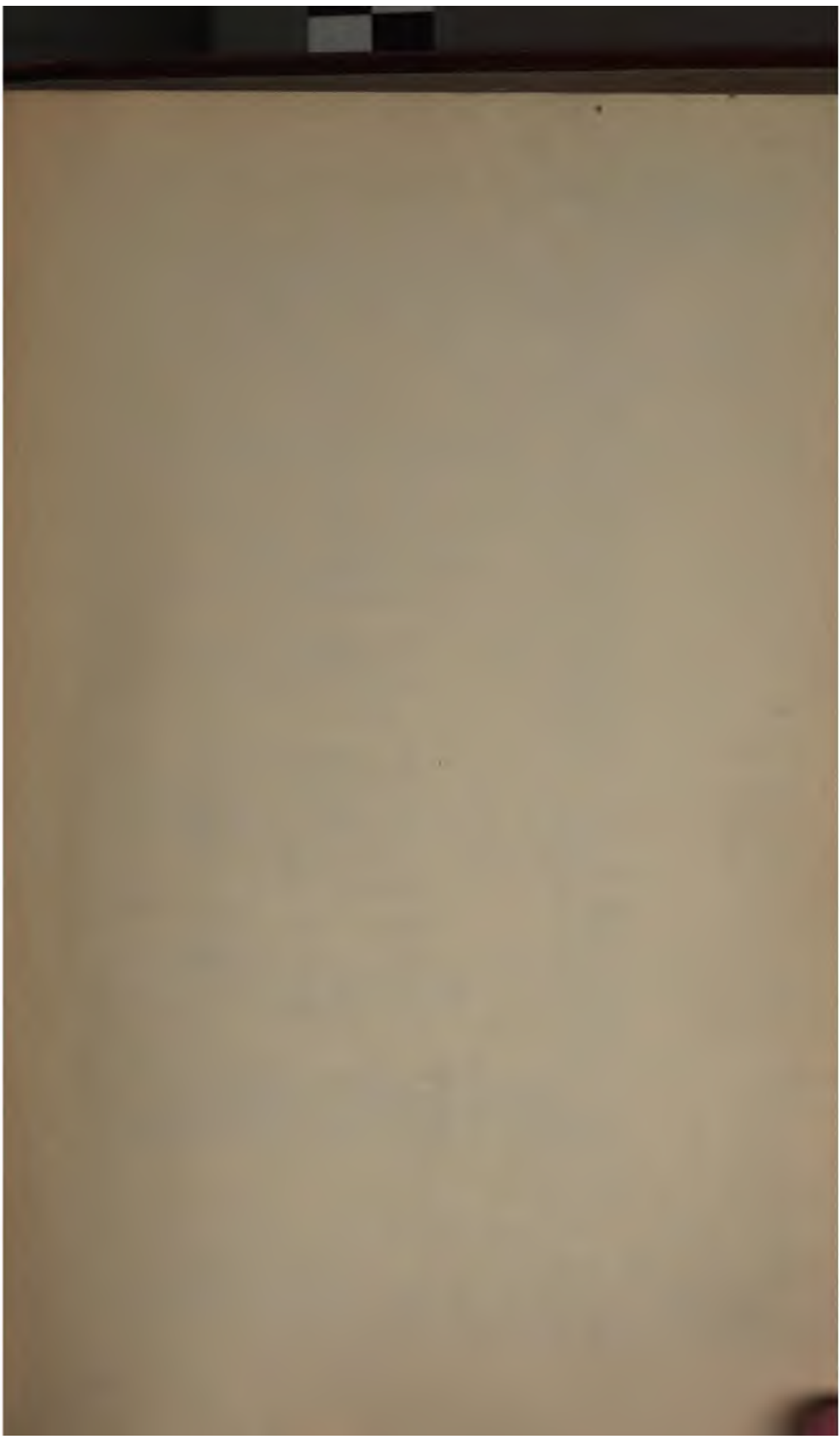
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

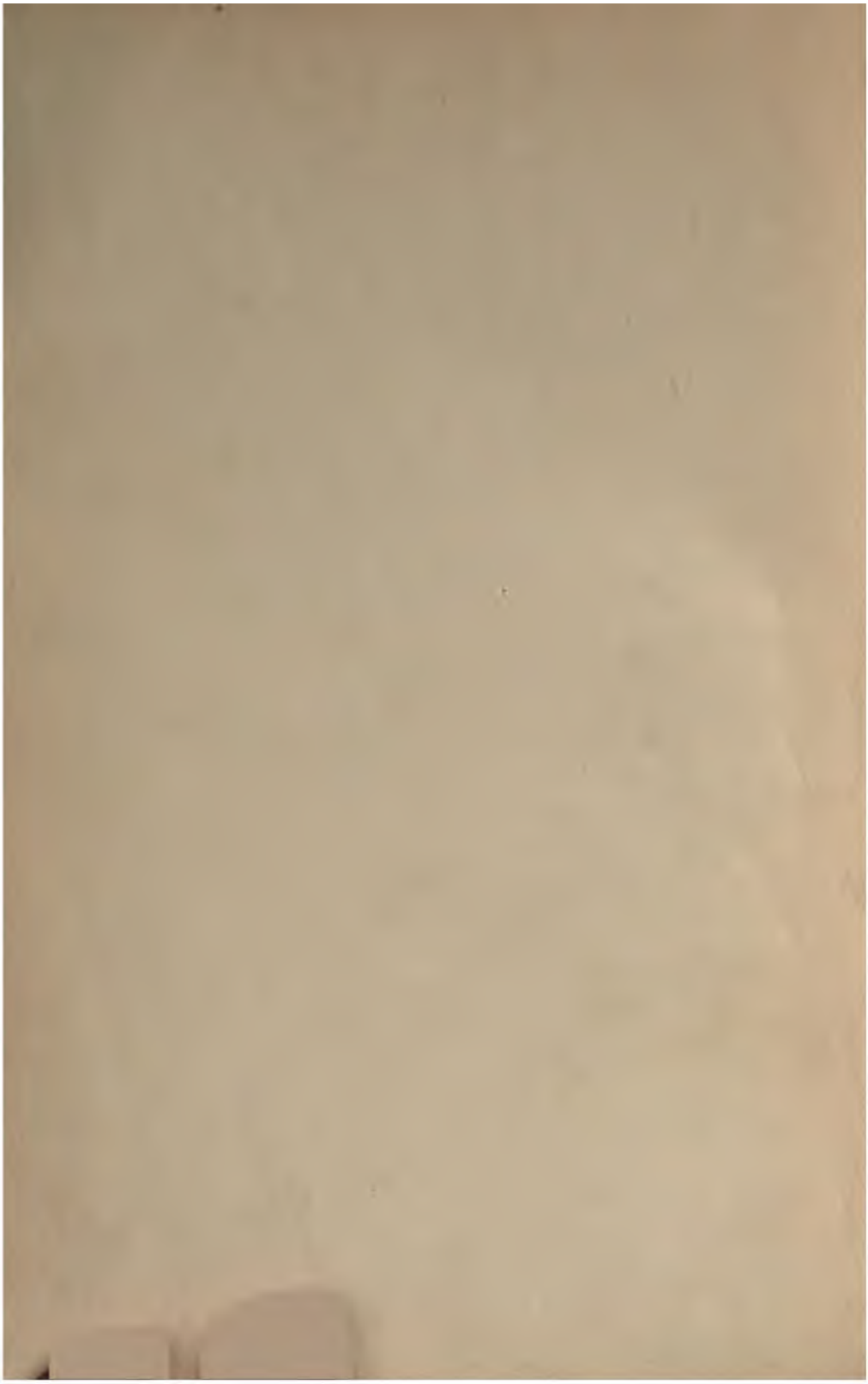
14455.60.10

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

FROM THE FUND OF
CHARLES MINOT
CLASS OF 1828







SYRINX,

or

A seauenfold Historie,

handled with varietie of

pleasant and profitable

both commicall and tragicall *Argument.*

Newly perused and amended

by the first Author.

W. Warner.

AT LONDON

Printed by *Thomas Purfoot* and are to bee sould in *Paules Churchyard* at the signe of the Bible.

1597.

To his right honorable *Lord*, *George Carey*, *Baron* of *Hunſdon*, Knight of the moſt *noble Order of the Garter*, *Lord* Chamberlaine of her Maieſties moſt honorable Houſhold, Captaine of the honorable Band of her Maieſties Penciners and of the Iſle of *Wight*, and one of her Highneſſe moſt honorable Priuie Councell, &c. Moſt humbly continueth the *recommended Patronage of his reformed* SYRINX.

W. VVarner.

HA[illegible] LIBRARY
[illegible] FUND

To the Reader.

YF long after my full-age I confirme an imperfection of my non-age, it is rather the Printers too forwardneſſe than myne owne follie: for (contrarie to mine expectation, or approbation) finding him at the point and reſolute to re-imprint this, erroneous as it then was, I held it not amiſſe (much being then amiſſe) to reuiſe and correct the ſame, ſuch as it nowe is. Simple enough I confeſſe, howbeit badder haue, with applauſe of Readers, vndergone gratious pardons: And (which ſomewhat encourageth) one (in penning pregnenter, & a Scholler better than my ſelfe, on whole graue the graſſe now groweth green, whom otherwiſe, though otherwiſe to me guiltie, I name not) hath borrowed out of euery *Calamus* or Storie herein handled, Argument & Inuention to ſeuerall Bookes by him publiſhed. An other of late, hauing (ſayning the ſame a Tranſlation) ſet foorth an hiſtorie of a Duke of *Lancaſter*, neuer before authored, hath vouchſafed (a thanke him) to incerte therein euen whole Pages *verbatim* as they are herein extant. For which their doing ſo farre off am I from detracting, as that I holde my ſelfe much graced, in that they haue accompted my meere Inuention, Arguments, and words worthy their vſurpation. Necligétly alſo in this Impreſſion is much in ſundrye places added, falſed, and omitted, contrarie to the Coppie, vnto which vouchſafe a ſilent pardon, and with thy penne a ſenſeble correction.

Pan, the God of the Ruſtickes, is ſayde the Inuentor

To the Reader.

of the *Arcadian* Pipe, which the composing of reeds of the Reeds into which his Sweete-hart, flying his amorous purſute, was tranſformed, tearmed after her name *SYRINX*. Therefore, a Pupile of ſuch a Tutor, proportionably to *Pans* nature and that Pipes number, haue herein ſo waded mine homely Medlie, vnmiratiously and modulatiuely vnder the title *SYRINX*. Whereof (curteous Reader) if thou ſhalt modeſtly conſture, more ſhall I, then (preuented though) had ſentenced this to ſilence be indebted to thy Gratitude, than this hath worth or my ſelfe had will to haue re-aduenturged this to cenſures: but howſoeuer, thine is euer.

W. W.

The table.

Arbaces.

Calamus Primus.

Soranes and his companie, in their ſayling, are tempeſtiouſly dryuen into a ſterile and harborleſſe Iland: vnto whome twoo forlorne and doſclate men diſcouer themſelues. Chap. I.

Of the ſpeech & petition made by one of the two miſerable men vnto *Soranes* & his *Aſſirian*. Chap. II.

He proceedeth, ſhewing by what occaſion they and a many *Meades* their countrymen firſt happened into that barren Iland; And of a great mutenie there begun at their firſt ariuall. Chap. III.

The ſpeeches of one *Chebron* inueighing againſt Ambition and Auarice: of which faultes he taxeth two *Meades* then aſpiring to ſouereantie. Chap. IIII.

Of the tragicall euent of *Chebrons* foreſaide Inuectiue: and of raſhnes ending in too late repentance. Chap. V.

Of it that befell, through Auarice and Crueltie, to *Soranes* and his Companie: And how the two *Meades* eſcape out of the Iland. Chap. VI.

Thetis.

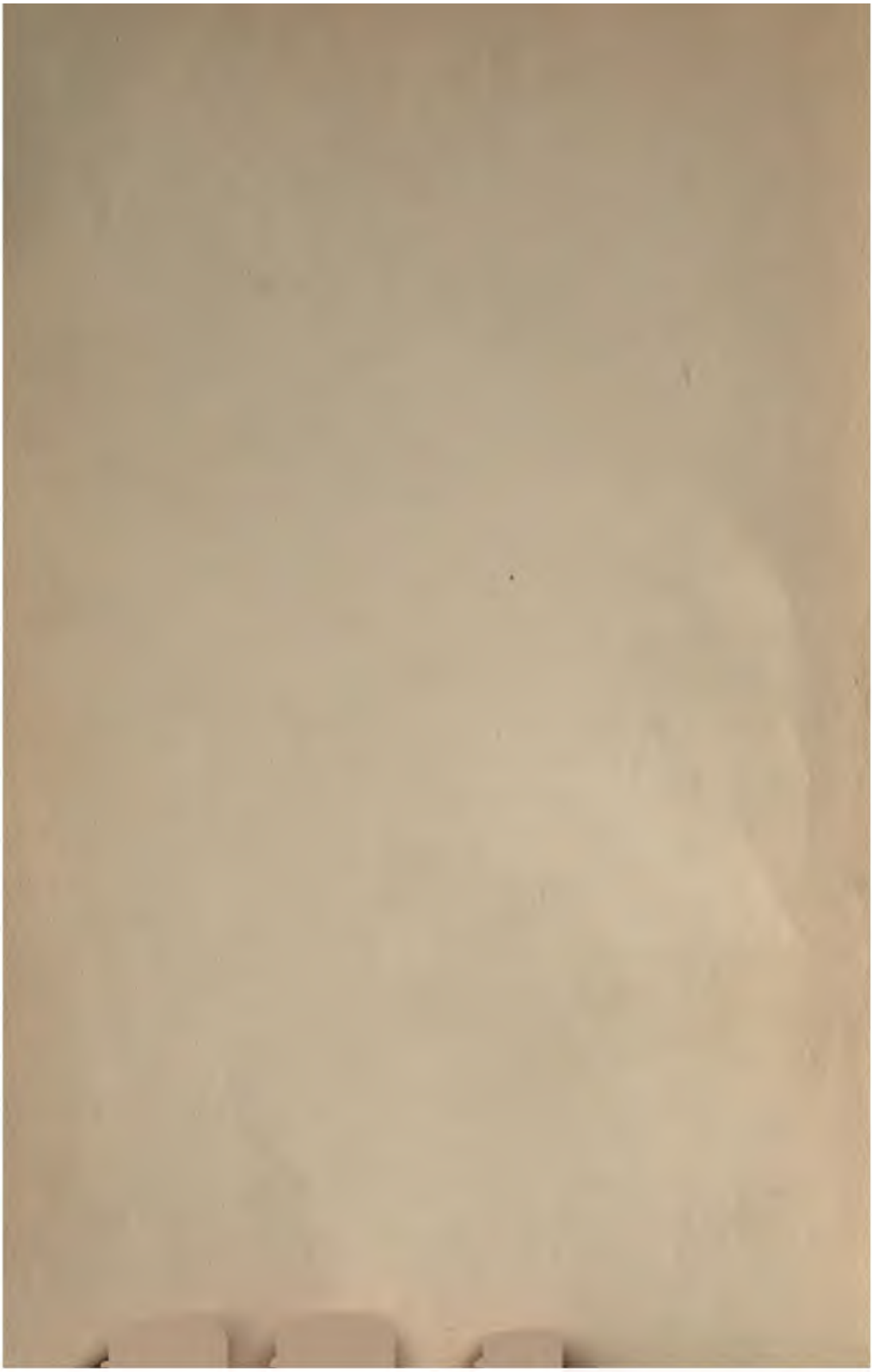
Calamus Secundus.

Atys and *Abynades* imbarke themſelues in queſt of *Soranes* their Father: their ariuall at a Caſtle in *Scythia*: how they are theare terrified & intertained. Chap. VII.

Of the pityfull pēnance of a moſt beautiful Lady in the ſame Caſtle: And ſome-what of the Temperancie, frugallitie, & māners of the *Scythians*. Chap. VIII.

The *Scythian* Lord reporteth his ſometimes loue towardes *Thetis* the foreſaid Lady. His chollerick inuectiue againſt the leuetie & vanity of women. Chap. IX.

Hee



SYRINX,

or

A ſeauenfold Hiſtorie,

handled with varietie of

pleaſant and profitable

both commicall and tragicall *Argument.*

Newly peruſed and amended

by the firſt Author.

W. Warner.

AT LONDON

Printed by *Thomas Purfoot* and are to bee ſould in *Paules Churchyard* at the ſigne of the Bible.

1597.

[redacted]

To his right honorable Lord, *George Carey*, Baron of *Hunſdon*, Knight of the moſt *noble Order of the Garter*, Lord Chamberlaine of her Maieſties moſt honorable Houſhold, Captaine of the honorable Band of her Maieſties Pencioners and of the Iſle of *Wight*, and one of her Highneſſe moſt honorable Priuie Councell, &c. Moſt humbly continueth the recommended *Patronage of his reformed* SYRINX.

W. VVarner.

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
FUND

To the Reader.

YEleng after my full-age I confirme an imperfection of my nor-age, it is rather the Printers too forwardneſſe than myne owne follie: for (contrarie to mine expectation, or approbation) finding him at the point and reſolute to re-imprint this, erroneous as it then was, I held it not amiſſe (much being the amiſſe) to reuiſe and correct the ſame, ſuch as it nowe is. Simple enough I confeſſe, how beit badder haue, with applauſe of Readers, vndergone gratious pardons: And (which ſomewhat encourageth) one (in penning pregnenter, & a Scholler better than my ſelfe, on whole graue the graſſe now groweth green, whom otherwiſe, though otherwiſe to me guiltie, I name not) hath borrowed out of euery *Calamus* or Storie herein handled, Argument & Inuention to ſeuerall Bookes by him publiſhed. An other of late, hauing (fayning the ſame a Tranſlation) ſet foorth an hiſtorie of a Duke of *Lancaſter*, neuer before authored, hath vouchſafed (a thanke him) to incerte therein euen whole Pages *verbatim* as they are herein extant. For which their doing ſo farre off am I from detracting, as that I holde my ſelfe much graced, in that they haue accompted my meere Inuention, Arguments, and words worthy their vſurpation. Necligétly alſo in this Impreſſion is much miſſundrye places added, falſed, and omitted, contrarie to the Coppie, vnto which vouchſafe a ſilent pardon, and with thy penne a ſenſeble correction.

Pan, the God of the Ruſtickes, is ſayde the Inuentor

of the *Arcadian* Pipe, which hee composing of seauen of the Reeds into which his Sweete-hart, flying his amorous pursute, was transformed, tearmed after her name *SYRINX*. I therefore, a Pupie of such a Tutor, proportionably to *Pans* nature and that Pipes number, haue herein sowinded mine homely Medlie, vmmiratiuely and modulatiuely vnder the title *SYRINX*. Whereof (curteous Reader) if thou shalt modestly consture, more shall I, that (preuented though) had sentenced this to silence be indebted to thy Gratitude, than this hath worth or my selfe had will to haue re-aduentured this to censures: but howsoeuer, thine is euer.

W. W.

The table.

Arbaces.

Calamus Primus.

Soares and his companie, in their ſayling, are tempeſtiouſly driuen into a ſterile and harborleſſe Iland: vnto whome twoo forlorne and doſclate men diſcouer themſelues. Chap. I.

Of the ſpeech & petition made by one of the two miſerable men vnto *Soares* & his *Aſſirian*. Chap. II.

He proceedeth, ſhewing by what occaſion they and a many *Meades* their countrymen firſt happened into that barren Iland: And of a great miſeanie there begun at their firſt ariuall. Chap. III.

The ſpeeches of one *Chebron* inuaighing againſt Ambition and Auarice: of which faultes he taxeth two *Meades* then aſpiring to ſouerantie. Chap. IIII.

Of the tragicall euent of *Chebrons* foreſaide Inuectiue: and of raſhnes ending in too late repentance. Chap. V.

Of it that befell, through Auarice and Crueltie, to *Soares* and his Companie: And how the two *Meades* eſcape out of the Iland. Chap. VI.

Thetis.

Calamus Secundus.

Atys and *Abynados* imbarke themſelues in queſt of *Soares* their Father: their ariuall at a Caſtle in *Scythia*: how they are theare terrified & intertained. Chap. VII.

Of the pityfull pēnance of a moſt beautiful Lady in the ſame Caſtle: And ſome-what of the Temperancie, frugallitie, & māners of the *Scythians*. Chap. VIII.

The *Scythian* Lord reporteth his ſometimes loue towardes *Thetis* the foreſaid Lady. His chollerick inuectiue againſt the leuetie & vanity of vvomen. Chap. IX.

Hea

The Table.

He ſheweth by what meanes luſt breedeth, increaſeth, and what it effecteth. Chap. X.
He preſcribeth rules againſt Laſciuiouſnes. Chap. XI.
Of *Thetis* her diſloyaltie; and by what chance the *Scythian* Lorde eſcaped the vnſuſpected Conſpiracie of her and *Armatrites*. Chap. XII.
How the *Scythian* Lord by the rude Salutation of *Armatrites* his Concubine vnderſtoode of the euill that was practized againſt him. Chap. XIII.
Howe the *Scythian*, taking tardie the Leachers, dealeth by eyther. Chap. XIIII.

Belopares.

Calamus Tertius.

How the abſence of *Atys* and *Abynades*, cauſing their friendes a Shipbord to doubt of their ſafetie, occaſioned them to ſpeake of the incommodities of Sea-faring and Trauell. Chap. XIIII.
Howe the Maiſter aproueth ſea-faring and trauell to bee commodious and commendable: the *Pylot*, qualifying the controuerſie, &c. Chap. XV.
The *Pylot*, to ſhewe how daungers are no leſſe incident to men on ſhoare than at the Seas, ſpeaketh his owne experience. Chap. XVI.
The *Pylot* alſo reporteth a ſtorie of his experienced daunger and diſtreſſe on the Seas. Chap. XVII.
A ſpeech by *Menophis* to his diſpairing Souldiers on ſhipbord, dehorting them frō the feare of death, & exhorting them to the contrarie reſolution. Chap. XVIII.
The *Pylots* proſecution of the ſea-diſtreſſed Storie, howe him ſelfe, contrarye to hope, eſcaped: And of *Atys* and *Abynades* their returne from the *Scythians* Caſtell. Chap. XIX.

Pheone.

The table.

Pheone.

Calamus quartus.

The *Pylot* reporteth the occaſion of thaforeſaide diſaſtrous voyage of *Memphis*: and of the loue betwixt *Stauробates* and *Pheone*. Chap. XX.

Howe *Pheone*, cauſeleſſe ſuſpitious of *Stauробates* hys loyaltie, exclaymeth of the credultie of her Sexe, and the inconſtancie of men: And howe ſhee laſtlye reſolueth. Chap. XXI.

King *Stauробates* hearing no tydings of *Pheone*, became enamored on *Marpiſſa* her Neece. *Marpiſſa*, not affecting his loue, is enamored of one *Criſippus*. Chap. XXII.

Marpiſſa taketh occaſion to diſcloſe to *Criſippus* her affection towards him. Chap. XXIII.

Of *Criſippus* his timerous anſwere, to *Marpiſſas* kinde offer. Chap. XXIIII.

Criſippus becommeth paſſionately amorous, he wryteth to *Marpiſſa*: how they conclude, and their calamitie that ſucceeded. Chap. XXV.

King *Selchim* his ſpeach, and cruell ſentence pronounced againſt his Daughter and *Criſippus*. Chap. XXVI.

Pheone diſcloſeth her ſelfe vnto the twoo Kinges, reuerſeth their rigorous ſentence: telleth *Criſippus* diſcente, and her owne former courſes concerning her ſelfe & him, &c. Chap. XXVII.

Deipyrus.

Calamus quintus.

An entrie by occaſion, into a new reported ſtorie: And firſt of the inſecuritie of worldly bleſſe. Chap. XXVIII.

The table.

Tymetes telleth how *Deipyrus* diſtreſſed and afterward in a Forreſt reſcued out of perill a Queene and her two Infants. Chap. *XXIX.*

What ſpeeches and paſſions paſſed betwixt the wretched Queene and repentant *Deipyrus*, whilſt either knew not th'other. Chap. XXX.

More of it that paſſed betwixte the Queene and *Deipyrus* in the Forreſt: And what in the meane time befell the king her huſband, through trecherie of a falſe friend reconcyled. Chap. XXXI.

Of *Deipyrus* his great Contriſion and Repentance, he being falne into a deepe Pitte: And how and by whome he was holpen theare-out. Chap. *XXXII.*

Howe the King after this their vnexpected interuiew dealt with *Deipyrus*. Chap. *XXXIII.*

How it fared & fel out afterwards, with the King, *Deipyrus*, the Queene, and her Infants. Chap. XXXIIII.

How by a ſight in the *Lycian* Shippe and *Tymates* his ſpeeches, *Atys* & *Abynados* had hope concerning their Father with him they ſayle into *Lydia*. Chap. *XXXV.*

Aphrodite.

Calamus Sextus.

Xenarchus his friendly aduertiſemẽt to *Tymetes* to beware of falſhoode in fellowſhippe, *Lydia* & the louely Laſſes there diſcribed. Chap. *XXXVI.*

Atys frameth an Apologie for womẽ: condemning the too curious prying of men into their Infirmities. Ca *XXXVII.*

More in diſcommendation of their Detractors, & in Cõmendation of women. Chap. *XXXVIII.*

Hee further proſecuteth the praiſe of Women, and of Matrimonie. Chap. XXXIX.

The

The table.

The Cenſure of *Atys* his Auditorie touching the foreſayd Appologie, howe *Mazeres* procured the apprehenſion and impriſonment of *Tymetes*, *Atys*, and *Abymadus*. Chap. XL.

How the woefull Father *Tymetes*, both by warre and faire wordes, endeuoureth the deliuerie of his Sonne: and of his Paſſionat ſpeeches. Chap. XLI.

Tymates his magnanimitie, his opinion and contempt of death, and of his End. Chap. *XLII.*

Aphrodite with Teares frequenteth the Tombe of *Tymetes*, *Atys*, and his brother are conuayed out of Priſon. *Xenarchus* to reuenge his friendes death combateth *Mazeres*, and what enſued. Chap. *XLIII.*

Of *Aphrodite* her moane: Of *Mazeres*, hers, and the Tyrantes deathes: And of the Reſtauration of *Tymetes* his Father to his Kingdome. Chap. *XLIIII.*

Opheltes.

Calamus Septimus.

An occaſion of a new ſtorie. Of good and bad Magiſtrates, & of the tedious ſuites of poore Clyants. Chap. *XLV.*

Philargus his complaint againſt *Opheltes* an vngrateful Vnthrift his ſonne in law. Chap. *XLVII.*

Ingratitude & diſdaine condempned, their Contraries Cõmended, and of man, as he is fleſh, diſcyphered: with a iuſt Sentence againſt *Opheltes*. Chap. *XLVIII.*

Of the rare conſtance, and patience of *Alcippe*: *Opheltes* his dotage on a harlot, for whom hee would haue foredone himſelfe. The loyaltie of a Wife, and leuetie of a Curtizan. Chap. *XLIX.*

Alcippe her kindnes & good aduiſe to *Opheltes*: and more concerning his dotage. Chap. L.

The table.

How *Opheltes* was reclaymed from his follye: Of the Harlots ende, and of the comicall Euent enſuing. Chap. *LI.*

Arbaces.

Pars Calami prima.

How *Arys*, *Alynadis*, & their Followers, being in queſt of *Soranes*, are taken Priſoner in an Iland: and of the Crueltie purpoſed againſt them by *Dircilla* the Gouerneſſe of the ſame Iland, &c. Chap. *LII.*

Of the commiſeration of the Ilanders had towards the captiue and cõdemned *Aſſirians*, and of *Soranes* being founde of his Sonnes. Chap. *LIII.*

How *Dircilla*, offẽded with the Ilãders, proſecuteth her reuengefull hatred againſt the *Aſſirians*. Chap. *LIIII.*

Of the ſpeeches of one of the ſingled out *Medes*, on the behalfe of the condemned *Aſſirians*. Chap. *LV.*

Of the other ſingled-out *Mede* his ſpeaches: & an vnexpected ioyful meeting thẽ diſcouered. Chap. *LVI.*

Dircilla reporteth her firſte landing and terrors in that Iland, with other matters not vnworthy obſeruation. Chap. *LVII.*

Shee declareth howe, and in what condition ſhe founde thoſe Ilanders at her firſt comming: and by what meanes ſhee reformed them, and became their Soueraigne. Chap. *LVIII.*

Of their generall Reſolution after this their happy meeting. Chap. *LIX.*

The end of the Table.

Arbaces.

George

CHAP. I.

¶ Sorares and his companie in their sayling are tempestiously dryuen into a sterile and harborlesse Iland: vnto whom two forlorne & desolate men discouer themselues.

Calamus primus.

AT what time Zamieis Ninias, the fift Emperour of Assiria, sonne of Ninus and Asedianta Semiramis, had in battell vanquished th'accursed sonne of his Father, and common enemie to mankind Cham, otherwise called the Ogypsian Saturne, and sonne of Noa, then vsurping ouer the Bactrians, part of his Nauie (vpon occasion) returning by Schythia, was so dangerously tossed with storms and seas, that they which seemed euen now most glorious and insolent victors appeared then most miserable and desolate wretches. Neuerthelesse, after long dispayre of their liues, and great losse of their treasure, the disparkled fleete of the Assirians arriued at Niniuie: one only ship excepted, wherein were imbarked more than an hundred braue Soldiours, ouer whom one Sorares was Captaine.

Not far from that place whereas the mountaines Taurus and Caucasus begin the head springs of all the Asian Seas,

whiche take their ſeuerie names according to the channels whereinto the ſcattered waters fall, there lieth an Iland, no leſſe obſcure for the ſituation, then vnfrequented for ỹ infertilitie thereof, into this Iland the ſhip of Sozares was by tempeſt driuen. Theare hauing landed his men, and repaired his bether-beaten Veſſell, he determined a farther ſearch into the Iland, as well to learne what commodities might there be founde, as to keepe his ſoldiers occupyed vntill time might ſerue more conueniently for their departure away: and therefore marching from his ſhip in good order, he peaſed a great part of the ſame Iland; wherein he found nothing but myrie bogges, or ſtiepie rockes, not worth the diſcouerie, much leſſe the trauell or hazard of a conqueſt: and he made it no wonder that he founde no people theare to defend it, ſeing he himſelfe thought euerie day a peance vntill he had left it. At the length, finding the wind to bee more fauourable then their diſcouerie profitable, his purpoſe was to retire his men, and forthwith to haue hoyſed ankers. But whilſt he reſted in this reſolution, the Aſſirians might eſpie deſcending towards them from a mountaine two men, altogether vnweaponed and naked, ſauing that their priuie members were in ſome parts diſorderly couered with a ſeme vnhandſome rags: their lokes ſeemed wilde, their countenance full of beautifie, their colour ſwarth, their heare & beardes long, lothſome, and vnkembde, and (to deſcribe them in a word) being men in ſhape, they ſeemed monſters in ſhewe: but yeat ſuch monſters as were rather to be pitied then to be feared. Theſe being come before the Aſſirians, albeit their then vnmeanour fauoured more of the place of their preſent aboade, then of ỹ ciuilitie (ſmall though it were) of the country wherin they were bred, yet remembring that they were men, & that they were to deale with men, the one of them (whoſe name was Arbaces, ſometime a Duke in Media) had theſe following ſpeeches.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

¶ Of the speech and petition made by one of the two myserable men vnto Sorates and his Assirians.

MOst happy people (to whom otherwise I should haue giuen a contrarie salutation, had not I descried your ship, a friendly instrument to rid you out of so fruitlesse an Iland) I would not haue you imagine that wanting weapons to expell you, wee endeuour by wordes to terrifie you. We are but twayne (as you see) and the only inhabitants of this vninhabitable Iland, yet twayne a greater number thē that the plentie of this place is able to satisfie: not for that we are coustous desiring all, but miserable hauing nothing. Our foode is rootes, grasse, and leaues, our lodging a Caue framed by nature out of the hard quarrie, our bed mosse, our apparell only such as you see, & the same the vnhappy spoiles of our haplesse Companions: yet these are but trifles in respect of a tragedie: And for that you haue partly some experience of the place, though better cheape by all, than wee that haue payed therefore to the vttermost, I leaue you to iudge how ẏ same doth battell, by the view of our forlorne personages: saying in a word, that hell is no hell in comparison of this, or that this is hell it selfe without any comparison. In that we liue we are not vngratefull to the Gods, but in that we are not dead we account our selues vnfortunate: for had death been plyant to our petitions, ẏ end of our liues had been long since the end of our sorrowes. But hope ouer-comming dispaire, for that in the one is possibilitie, in the other no remedie, knowing that as the Gods haue power by iustice to punish, so they haue will by mercie to pardon, we haue made necessity a vertue, continuance a custome, & patience our protector. Whence we are our language bewrayeth, what you are your Ensignes doe manifest, but what we demaunde, resteth as yet vntouched. Wee will not

feare to speake, though you spare not to strike, aboundance of hardnesse hath made vs hardie, the worst of your malice can be but death, and the best thing may betide vs shall bee change of our liues. We are Meades, not monsters, ciuill people, not sauadge Flanders, banished from home through your prosperitie, and betrayed here through our owne practises, once flying your enmitie, & now following your friendship, as men enforced to the former by your wronges, and constrained to y later through our owne wretchednes. With this courage neuerthelesse (ye Assirians) we sollicitate your fauour, that if the old rancour of grudge be not yet qualified with the newe spectacle of our present calamities, our sides (knowe yee) haue not as yet taken so much the propertie of these hard Rockes, but that they will easilie giue entrance to your reuenging weapons. Albeit, by the way, it mighte be sayde, that as you are to deale roughlye with those that stand against you in combate, so ought you to deale mercifully with those which at your feete lie prostrate, for in the one is not courage more magnificent, then in the other charitie meritorious: and though it be glorious to be ouercome by battell, yeat it is more glorious to bee ouercome by pietie. For (alas) shall men, whom nature hath endued with reason and vnited in originall amitie, by occasion of any corrupt accident vnnaturally degenerate towardes their owne consortes? or doth it derogate any thing from vertue, if by our industrie wee better the vitious? or shall wee cut of those limbes that are nowe sounde, because the same were once sore? Well, if remembring what we haue been, you will not conceaue what wee woulde bee, if our humble submission be thought an insufficient reconciliation, if you feare vs that haue neither will nor power to harme you, if you wil not (which is the summe of our suite) deliuer vs from hence, that of our owne accord are falne into your handes, if (I say) it be your pleasures that we shall not weepe for vnexpected kindnesse, whom you shall not enforce to dread for any practised torments, then assure your selues you cannot bee more

tirannous

tirannous than we patient, and our death shall be more dishonourable to you, then our graues discontenting to vs. The only thing we craue is to be conuayed out of this Iland, a small petition, and easily performed: the poizinesse of twaine will not be burdenous to your barke, and ẏ hyer for our passage shall lighten your heartes. But to what purpose should I vse more speeches? if you bee mercyfull enough is sayd, if mercylesse much more will not serue.

CHAP. III.

¶ He proceedeth, shewing by what occasion they & a many Meades their countrymen first happened into that herran Iland: And of a great mutenie there begun at their first ariuall.

HOw rufully these wordes were vtered by the miserable Meade, and howe effectually the same wrought in the hartes of the Assirians, the passioned gestures of the one and the pityfull regards of the other did witnesse. Let it suffice, that the fillie soules were pitied, their pensinenesse comforted, their bodies appareled, all former enuitie pardoned, and libertie promised.

But see what an euill auent followed so good an hansel. In the night before the Assirians should depart, Sorares calling diuers the cheefe of his soldiors to suppe with him in his cabben, enuited amongst the rest the two Meades, and after supper ended, he entreated Arbaces the miserable Duke to declare by what mishap they chanced into that harborlesse Iland, whereupon Arbaces proceeded in this manner. Albeit (good Sorares) the remembrance of our passed sorrowes will be little lesse then a present death to our spirits, the whiche without anguish we cannot rehearse, nor you without pittie heare, yeat shall you not find vs daintie to aunswere your request, whom we haue found so forward to yeild vs releefe. Aboue two hundred yeares of mine age are alreadie passed, a short time, if not lengthened out with continuall sorrowes,

the roote thereof chiefly ſpringing from Aſſiria: and yeat (good Sorares) thinke not that hauing cauſe to curſe your countriemen that banished vs into this Iland, that therefore we will ceaſe our prayers for you, by whom our deliuery is promiſed. The purporte of this my ſpeeche is to be conſtrued to this purpoſe, that as wee are not to accuſe you for our receaued iniuries at the handes of your predeceſſors, ſo is it not neceſſarie or of neceſſitie that in thinkes you become their ſucceſſors: for if we ſhall make their old controuerſies our new quarrels, it will followe that the firſt worlde and all thinges ſhall ceaſe to be, before ſtrife and diſcorde ſhall ceaſe to growe. But hitherto I haue been rather tedious to your eares, then anſwering to your demaunds, yeat pardon my beginning, and with patience tarrie an ende. It is a worlde to note the wonderous alteration of all thinges, even of late dayes, for omitting to ſpeake of the time before ꝑ generall Deluge, I will only glaunce at the ſuperfluitie of this our preſent age. It hath been, yea within the time of my remembraunce, that men thought themſelues more ſure in their wilde Caues, then nowe ſafe in their walled Caſtles, better contenting themſelues with the vnforced fruitfulneſſe of the earth, then now ſatiſfied with their fruitleſſe compounds enforced by Art: the ſimplicitie of nature preſcribed vnto them an abſolute lawe, but ouermuch curioſitie now, ſubuerteth both lawe and nature. What ſpeake I of part? when it is manifeſt that no ſooner golde and ſiluer (the Ambaſſadors from hell) had inſinuated themſelues into the hartes of men, but that a generall ſubuerſion was made of all. Nemroth then taking vpon him an vnknowne title, not euer heard of before in all the worlde, much leſſe in Caldea, became a king in Babilon, who, by ſubtiltie hauing wone the hartes of the vnpolliticke people, by that meanes got them vnder the yoke of ſeruitude. Nemroth being dead, his ſonne Belus, hunting after greater ſuperioritie than was by his father newly erected, pretended by warres to dilate his dominions, whoſe dreadfull purpoſe being by death made

frustrate, his sonne Ninus, your late Emperour and our then persecutor, did execute: Making his new inuention of war and battell not only terrible to those that did taste it, but horrible to vs which as yet did feele it. After a while it came to passe, that we who hetherto did onlye heare much mischiefe of war reported, did now suffer the effects of that which of long time we feared: for Ninus landing an armie of soldiors in Media obtayned an easie victorie against vs, being in deede bad warriours, and in respect of holds armour & artillerie a people vtterly naked. Ninus being thus Conqueror, and we conquered, our king Farnus, his wife and vii. children murdered, continuall likelyhoods of an vniuersall slaughter still appearing, and the desolation of the whole countrey being generally expected for, diuers Nobles of Media, and others not of the basest calling, to the number of 100 and vpwards, of the which number, and the whole number now liuing we two are, hauing conuayed into a ship the gold and chiefest treasure of our late slaughtered king, and rather trusting to the incertaintie of the seas, than to the inhumanitie of the Assirian Soldiours, in an vnluckie hower hoisted vp our sayles, leauing with teares our wasted countrey, as men compelled to search after some new inhabitation. The seas we passed were numberlesse, the daungers we escaped were perilous, how farre we had sayled wee accounted not, how far we should sayle we knewe not, wheare to ariue we were ignoraunt, and all places (if farre enough from the Assirians) seemed to vs indifferent. In the end, being no lesse vnfortunate in our seafaring, then vnexpert in the [illegible] art of nauigation, seing our vittels to waste, our vessels [illegible], and our tackling to faile, such was then our com[illegible] dispaire, that (hauing no hope at al to escape ẏ threatning waues) it did only forethinke vs that we forsooke our naturall graues in our natiue countrey to finish our liues without honour amongst the mercilesse surges. But corke wanteth waite to sinke, and lead is ouer heauie to swimme, we were not so happie as to suffer shipwrack on the seas, being

ting preuentinate to ſorrowes on the ſhoare. At the length we eſpyed this Iland, and making to the ſame, neere about the place where this ſhip now ryueth we ſtroke ſaile: (vnhappy men) ſo ioyfull to vs ſeemed this our arriuall that (the promiſſing to our ſelues ſecurity when wee did but neuer enter into our ſorrowes) we leapt from our ſhip with minds neuer to reenter the ſame, kiſſing the very earth that firſt receaued vs a ſhore: this happned about mid-day, but before night our mirth was turned to mone, Not hauing, as yet made any ſacrifice to the Gods, before ſearch of the profit or diſprofit of the place, any conſideration care or ſorecaſt of after-claps whatſoeuer, we began to vnfraight our ſhipp, laying our gold and treaſure on the next ſhoare. Scarcely had the laſt man brought the laſt burthen from the ſhip, but that a contention fell betwixt two of the noble men (ſeuerally before tyme noted of Ambition and Auarice) about the diuiſion of the ſame treaſure: And ſuch was their madneſſe, that albeit the ir preſent plight rather required lowly teares than haughtie titles, yeat Ambition not yelding an inch to Auarice, either of them ſought by farre diſcents to fetch their petigrees from Iapeth and Madus, of whom we are the offſpring, as nere as poſſible they might. Amongeſt the inferior ſort theare was one Chebron, a little taule fellow, of a cholericke complection and an inuincible courage: he ſeeing the controuerſie that now began more and more to encreaſe, bending his browes and laying hand on his weapon, ſpake many wordes much diſpleaſing to either of the contentious Competitors. And were it not (Sorares) that I ſhoulde clog your eares with ouer long a diſcourſe, I would alſo repeate his wordes, the which I yet remember, as (in my conceit) wel worthy the noting.

Here Sorares interrupting him ſayd: If (good my friend) it ſhall not be troubleſome for you to ſpeake, it ſhall not be tedious for vs to heare, our dayes worke is done and it is yet but earlye night, let thoſe that will ſleepe, as for my ſelfe I am prouided to wake.

And

And were I alſo able (qd. Arbaces) to counterfeite the magnanimitie that then appeared in his countenaunce I would not willingly pretermit the ſame: but theſe were the wordes that Chebron then vſed.

CHAP. IIII.

¶ The ſpeeches of one Chebron inuaighing againſt Ambition & Auarice: of which faults he teacheth two Meades then aſpiring to ſouerantie.

If ſo be, qd. Chebron (my deere friends and countrymen) the inuaſion of the Aſſirians, the ruine of Media, and our late paſſed perils, had been to mee by oracle or otherwiſe reuealed, I then would haue made you acquainted before hand with ỹ which was threatned to follow: ſo might we eyther haue pacified the Gods by prayer, encouraged our ſelues to abyde the daunger, or elſe before it happned haue died for ſorrow: but, contrarie to our expectations, wee haue eſcaped the outrage of our foes, and though hardly yet ſafely eſcaped the ſeas. But nowe, if I that cannot diuine as a Prophet, prenoſticate as an Aſtrologer, inuocate as a Nigromancer, obſerue as an Augur, interpret as a Dreamer, calculate as a Wyzarde, or figure as an Arteſte, ſhould ſay vnto you that the miſchiefes yet behinde are more and greater than whereof wee haue alreadie our ſhares, you (perhappes thinking it impoſſible) would eſteeme it as a fable, and accompt me as a foole. O people for your inconſiderate peeuiſhnes to bee pitied, that hauing your ſenſes will neuertheleſſe ſeeme ſenſles, and ſeing imminent deſtruction dare neuertheleſſe be deſperate: haue ye been ouercome by men, betweene whom and you ought to be an equalitie, and ye at are yee feareles of Monſters, betweene whom & you conſiſteth no indifferencie? muſe not at ỹ which I haue ſpoken, for you are likely to find more thẽ monſters, being to encounter with Ambitiõ & Auarice: thone by preſumption would reuoke the

gods from the ſkies, and thother reſt vncontented to poſſeſſe their ſeates, & vnles both be incountred neither of both can be conquered, ſuch is their vndeuiſible prapecties. Knowe yee not (my friends) that the ambitious perſon, neither hauing gentry to elate him, reuenewes to inrich him, perſonage to adorne him, wit to aduaunce him, good qualities to preferre him, or any one vertue to commend him, if by the beneſit of Fortune her blindnes hee attaineth to dignity, hee forthwith becommeth a lordlike Tyrant, a vain-glorious Magnifico, carcles of other mens profit, & arrogãt of his own preſermeut: his countenaunce is faſtidious, his ſpeech loftie, his thought aſpiring, not brooking his ſuperiour, nor bearing his equall, to his Inferiors an incarnat Diuell, and to himſelfe a conceited God. If beggers thus ſet on horſeback ride a galop, let vs then make account that theſe claiming by gentry will plie the ſpurre. Briefly what can I ſay more, then in effect is already experienced? ſee you not, or are you willingly blind? how theſe two Gallants only remembring what they ſometime were, but not acknowledging what they preſently be, make no queſtion of our common ſafetie, but fal to quarrels for their priuate ſuperioritie: not conſidering ỳ fire once quẽched forgoeth both heate & brightnes, that groſſe once mowed, looſeth both ſap and greenes, and that a noble man exiled is to be faſhioned to his altered Fortune. But omitting that they bee now declyned, and admitting them to be ſtill honorable and happie, yeat ſhould we for our own aſſurance reſpect the ſequell and haue an eie to their inclinations whom we admit our Gouernors. For mine owne part I carry this opinion, that had theſe men no other fault, yeat are they therefore vnfit for gouernment becauſe ſo forward to gouerne: authority ſhould bee denied to ſuch as deſire it, & offred to thoſe that refuſe it: for a wiſe man & one well minded neuer receiueth any office vnles thereunto compelled, as foreſeeing ỳ the ſame to his body ſhalbe a trauell, to his conſcience a care, that he ſhal be marked of al, enuied of many, &

cannot

cannot but bounce in a net. But ſuch as are theſe high-minded Intruders (whome wee may therefore call ignoble, becauſe not vertuous, as having already daſhed at home againſt the rockes of ignominy, and nowe heere entred into better ſhipwracke of the ſmall remaine of their credit,) theſe I ſay challenge preheminence not for deſertes, but of duty: exacting that of vs thorough ambition, which they can neither diſcreatly diſcharge, nor we dangerles diſpoſe: and yeat like as violent waters are prone to often eruptions, becomming ſhalloweſt within their ordinarye channels, ſo proude perſons euermore woulde ſeeme capable of higher dignities, though not well able to exerciſe their preſent meane offices: ſtill doth the proude man flatter himſelfe in that that hee woulde, not eſteeming of himſelfe in any poynt as he ought. There is hardly that thing ſo good but there may be a better, or that thing ſo bad but there may be a worſer: there is no beautie without ſome blemiſh, nor any blemiſh that is not either naturall, or neceſſarie: no perfection without ſome imperfection, and yeat the ſame imperfection either to be cured or tollerable: only Ambition, vntill of it owne ſelfe it be devoured, is bloodleſſe for bluſhing & intractable for taming, penurie doth not decreaſe it, and plentie doth increaſe it, in well doing it is inſolent, in ill doing impudent. As for the other monſter Auarice, a little varying from Ambition in qualitie of affection, but not in quantitie of affecting, this (I ſay) is ſtill hunting, but euermore hungering, ſtill praying, but continually pining, & ſtill hoording, but neuer having. For as the hollowe ſpoute receaueth much water and yeat retayneth nothing but ayre, ſo the couetous man gathereth muche wealth and yeat poſſeſſeth nothing but cares, and only he of all Monſters in his ranenous devouring is vnſatiable: for whereas commonly all other vices by ould age are impaired, this onlye vice is therein repayred, the ncereneſſe of the graue the rather adding to niggardize. O moſt miſerable manne, to whome is wanting as well that which

he possesseth, at that which wanteth: he hungereth after that which he coueteth, and feareth to lose that which hee enioyeth: and as in aduersitie he craueth prosperitie, so in prosperitie he feareth aduersitie, in his superior he dreadeth force, in his inferiour hee mistrusteth theft: such (I say) is his wretched estate, that hee presently suffereth all and so much as hee feareth: Therefore is it a true saying, that nothing may be wished more harmefull to a couetous man than long life. And (trust me) if we consider with what toile wealth is got, with what daunger it is kept, what charines in vsing it, what detriment in abusing it, and with what anguish we leaue it, then shall we find more profite in pouertie than quietnesse in riches. One thing it is to bee happie, and an other to be rich, but detestable is the exchange when to follow golde wee forsake the Gods, as no doubt doth the couetous man: of whom what should I more saye: but that his life is detested of many, his death desired of al, & being dead, ẏ poore man curseth, his heire reioyceth, the saints weepe, and the diuels laugh. How harmefull (ye Meades) these two Monsters haue been all the world hath found, wee haue felt, and more shall feele, except being yet but young Snakes, they be cut off before they grow to be old Serpents. If these two iollie Champions had been well counceled and not so couetous, or more pollitick and lesse proud, then this vnnecessarie strife should haue been the last thing of a thousand for our behoofes much more necessarie: Neither woulde they haue perswaded themselues to be Kings, not being assured of subiects, nor haue contended for a kingdome, not hauing conquered a plot wherein to plant it. Alas howe much more vnfortunate are we in transporting these reliques of gentry, and small remnant of treasure into Scithia, than in leauing the blood of our friends, & masses of wealth behind vs in Media. But if you can be content to cherpe in cages that may sing in the bushes, that these feast whilst you fast, if it be your pleasures to make them your Lords, and you to become their staues, yeat shall you vnderstād that Chebron hath set an hy-

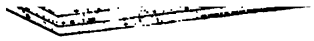
er

er prise of his freedome than to exchange it for such bondage: And though it be not my meaning to be superiour to ẏ worst here, yeat thinke I my selfe equall to the better of these two, and hee which hath deserued any thing at all, hath deserued more than either of them: only their newe courage seemeth strãg to me so wel acquainted with their late cowardise. Are not these the men? or were they then metamorphosed frõ Egles into Owles? that whilst we laboured on the hatches, lay quaking in their cabbens? Yes verely these are the same iolly fellowes, to one of which (for not aboue one may be receyued into a kingdome) you may resigne the pleasures of your ouer-passed perrils: as for my selfe I more account of libertie than esteme of such pollicie, and am more zealous, of your welfare than carefull of mine owne safetie, fearing more a comming then our common scourge.

CHAP. V.

¶ Of the tragicall euent of Chebrons foresayde Enuectiue: and of rashnes ending in too late repentance.

THus much Chebron with a couragious countenaunce spake, and was about to haue sayd more, but that he espyed one of those two against whom he thus inuayed (impatient of his speeches) to aime a dart against his head: wherefore the same anger that before had occasioned him to speake, and then had tyed his tongue, moued him now to vse his weapon, the which he pearced into the bowels of him that threatned the flinging of the dart and with the like successe he also dispatched the other, standing amased in beholding his dying companion, saying happily you shal find hell a gulfe as vnrepleatable as your selues haue been men vnsatiable. Beleeue me (Sorares) whether it were ẏ vigorious magnanimitie that then proceeded from him (for I may terme him magnanimious whom neither flattering nor frowning fortune can alter that preferreth mediocritie before superfluitie, a common



profit before a priuate gaine, and an honorable death, before a thraled life) or whether it were the timerous astonishment then planted in vs that gaue spurrs to these his proceedings, I know not, but most certaine it is, that like as the Sheaphard entreth into the Coote, there sequestring frō amidst the flockes what sheepe it pleaseth him to appoint to the slaughter, so Chebron, euen in the middle of vs, on these two performed this tragedie: so couragious was he, and so amased were we. Anon, as our appaled spirits were reuiued, wee began diuersly to construe of Chebron his words and to conceaue of his deeds, and being amongst our selues diuided, one part protested that he had wel done, an other company detested his deede, and some, not intermedling at all, stoode as newters. The more that Chebron intreated the factious Accomplices with reason, the more they threatned him and his Adherents with rigour, so that seeing them desperately addicted to assaute, he vnwillingly prouided to resist: wherupon they fell from brawling to blowes, and from wrangling to wounds, and he that now killeth, is himselfe by and by killed. Whilst we yet persisten this same frantike mutiniē, making horrible hauocke one of another. Those before named persons, which either for feare durst not or for policie would not be dealers in this quarrell, these men had loden themselues with great store of the treasure, & minding whilst we were thus busied in the fray to haue made a mart of our miseries, drew towardes the ship, with purpose to haue sayled away. But a common Souldiour, a factious fellow, smelling out this their pretence, & getting aboord before any of these newters might enter, had fired the same in sundrye places, the which hauing of it selfe sufficient of combustable matter, was quickly consumed. This wee espied, and as wee coulde not then intend it for the fray, so remained wee so farre of from squenching the flame, that it rather reioyced vs of the so prenēting of those dastards (as we did thē terme them) thē once thought on ẏ misery that hereof ensued, for hauing gold wee vainly perswaded our selues not to want any thing. But by this

this meanes those that would thus haue fled, were now enforced to take a part in our ciuill fight, and still perseuer we in mangling & murthering one an other, vntill Chebron & his Adherents had vtterly confounded the aduerse party, & that of an hundred men and more that arriued heere, within fiue or sixe howers only xvi. remained vnslaine: yeat we (though so small a number to deuide so great a bootie) in the sharing had well nere begone a second broyle, and that day (I would wee had been so happie) had been the last to vs all, had not night preuented our headye proceedings, and darknesse staied our desperatenesse. But daylight thus failing vs, euery man bestowed himselfe vpō a seueral pile of the heaped treasure, keeping a wakefull and suspicious watche of all that night. As soone as the gray morning appeared, & that wee beheld the wooluish aspects of our own selues with blood embrued, the dead carkases of our slaughtered Companions, & looking towards the sea, remembred the burning of our ship and perishing of our vittailes, then then our furious fearcenesse was changed to fearefull fantasies, and our heady rashnesse to helplesse repentance. But what dwell I longer on this mischiefe, the matter being much more dolorous that resteth yet vnrefited? When our handes were thus ouersoone filled with blood, and that our eies had ouer late emptyed their teares, although our wearie limmes require rest, yeat our sharpe appetites did hunger foode: and therefore as well pricked forwardes by hunger and trauell, as desirous to bee instructed what a profitable plot we had picked out for our here abode, we discouered into the farthest circuit of this Iland. But the same seemed abhorred of the gods, and wee founde it vtterlye abandoned of men, beasts, fowles, fruites, and euery other thing necessarye for mans behoofe: and (worser then so) we being shiplesse, and on euery side with mayne Seas enuironed, did also remayne hope-lesse of our deliuery from hence. Now in this melancholye, euery man layde violent handes vppon Chebron, fathering our woes vppon those his

late

late inuective wordes: whereby (in my concept) hee rather intended quietneſſe than pretended any ſuch quarrels: howbeit our mutinous minds, altered with the time & troubles, made a newe conſtruction of his zealous meaning, and bet what he could, wee preſſed him to death vnder an huge heape of golde, whoſe bones vnder the pile are yet extant. After this, ſome of our companie not able to abide the extremitie of this Climate, the ſtench of the ayre, and ſtirilitie of the Iland, by mutuall conſents made mutuall diſpatch of their owne perſons; and ſhortly after vntimely death finiſhed the liues of the reſidue: who being far more fortunate in dying than we in ſurviuing, left onely vs two the vnhappie Inheritours of theſe vnſpeakeable calamities. Thus haue you heard (Sorares) the effect, though not the full, of our tragicall arriuall, and to morrowe wee will gratifie you with ſo much gold as ſhall partly counteruaile your great curteſie, though not comparable to the conceaued comfort of our promiſed deliuerie. Arbaces thus finiſhed his lamentable diſcourſe, and Sorares diſmiſſed the whole companie.

CHAP. VI.

¶ Of it that befell, through Auarice and Crueltie, to Sorares and his Companie: And howe the two Meades eſcape out of the Iland.

The next morning Arbaces and the other Meade his fellow conducted the Aſſirians vnto the piles of gold, being in a manner ouer-growne with moſſe and ruſt: with which bootie the Aſſirians with merrie hartes and many handes had quickly fraighted their ſhip. But vnceaſeable are the miſchiefes that gold procureth, and vnſatiable are the mindes of couetous men.

Sorares being thus ſpead of his bootie, and hauing conſulted with his Countrymen of a further Inquiſition, began now to exact at the handes of the poore Meades a greater

may than wherein they could satisfie their Auarise, hunting after that which was not theare to be had, and seeking, as it were to extort fire out of water: they would not bee perswaded but that ẏ guiltlesse soules had reserued vnto themselues some greater treasurs: denyall might not acquite them, nor threaty saue them from tortures: so that hauing alreadie passed same to them were threatned other & greater, except they woulde promise what (poore wretches) they coulde not performe.

But in the end this diuilish deuise of the Assirians hastened their owne mischiefe: who, thus dreaming of hidden treasure for search thereof had scattered themselues, without any one man remaining aboord, into euery corner of ẏ Iland: When in the meane time Arbaces and his fellowe, remembring how hardlye they had been hampered and were still indangered vnder those vngratefull men whom they had euen owe so much enriched, taking therefore that time as fit opportunitie to auoyde their mynasses, boorded the vnmanned ship of Sorares and cutting the cables, launch out at the pleasure of the windes and the waues.

The Assirians anon (contrarie to their expectations) perceauing their ship aflote, ran like mad men vp and downe the shoare, wheare by outward signes and sorrowfull gestures, they signified such apparēt motiōs of their perplexed minds, that euen the two Meades, experienced of the selfe same distresse and moued with compassion towards the vngratefull people, indeuoured in all they possible might to returne backe againe into their succour: but all in vaine, doe what they might, contrarie windes resisted their mercifull meaning, carrying thē quite away with an inualuable fraight of that treasure, which (as before) had chieflye procured all their troubles: whome we leaue safely to ariue in Sarmatia, and Sorares with his couetous Assirians shut vp in the barren Iland, as meritorious Possessors of so miserable a possessiō. Of all which, of their successe, and of other not impertinent Accidents, remayneth as followeth.

Thetis.

¶ Atys and Abynados imbarke themselues in quest of Sorares their father: their ariuall at a Castle in Scythia: how they are the are terrified and intertayned.

Calamus secundus.

CHAP. VII.

IN this meane while, after that Zamieis his imperiall fleete (except that shippe of Sorares) was arriued in Assiria, albeit the vanquishing of the Bactrians mooued a common mirth to all, yeat the lacke of Sorares & his company caused peculier moane to some, and that especially to Atys & Abynados, two braue youths, the sonnes of the same Sorares, whom at his departure to the Bactrian warres hee had left at Niniuie.

These two youthfull gentlemen & brethren toobe the mist of their Father with such impatience, that neither incites with their pleasaunt welfare at home, nor dreading whatsoeuer dangers might happen them abroad, nor yeat disswaded by any theie dearest friends, did voluntarilye vow themselues to continuall trauels, vntill either they should heare

tidings

[illegible] of their [illegible], or at the [illegible] their [illegible] should be determined in such trauell.

In this purpose therefore, accompanied with an aged vncle of theirs called Orchamus & diuers Assirian gentlemen, whose friendes were also missing, in a well paueished ship they launche from Niniue; and hauing sailed through many seas, were now entred into that channell, whereas the riuer Arexes leauing the sea Caspium doth glide by ye deserts of Scythia. Heere on the top of an hill, they descry an auncient Castell, and minding there (as in diuerse other places before) to learne tydings of that whereunto their trauell tended they came a shoare: and whilest they rest otherwise busied, Atys and Abynados went vnto and entred the Castell: wherein they founde no liuing creature, but yeat respecting the small ostentation and curiositie of that nation, brauelye furnished with all thinges necessarie.

At the last, entring into an inner roome as it were a parlor, in ye middle whereof an ill harth was a great fier, loking vp by chaunce into ye roofe, they espy hanging smoke-dryed three quarters of a man, as it seemed to them, not long before so dismembred. What might bee deemed of this monstrous spectacle they stand not to descant, neither durst they hazard to stay the enquiry, but ostteme it better pollicie to feare & fly what they did not yet feele, then to feele what they did feare and might flie: and therefore, such was their post-hast to be gone, and so great their feare in running awaye, that though to others they ran as Harts, yeat to themselues they crept as Snayles, thinking euery threashoole a thicket, & euery rishe a ridge in their way. But whilst they thus skud in their amasednes, at ye foote of ye hil they were encountred by the Lord of the castell, wayted vppon with a number of seruantes, some of them loaden with sundry beastes by them newly chased in those Deserts. The affrighted gentlemē being now come into ye presēce of the Scythian Lord (at whose hāds they only expected some rare tirāny, not loking amōgst those barbarous people, specially in ye place, to find at al any

intertainement) were by him neuertheleſſe curteouſly ſalu-
ted, and at length, more vpon importunate intreaty on his
parte, then anye willingnes of their owne (for his fayre
ſpeech might not shake off their fearefull conjectures) for
that night entertayned his gueſtes.

CHAP. VIII.

¶ Of the pityfull pennance of a moſt beautyfull Lady in the ſame Caſtle: And ſome-what of the Temperancie, frugallitie, and manners of the Scythians.

WHē the Scythians had (according to their cookrie) dight-
ted the venſō they had killed, & that the Scythian Lord
had ſate a ſmall while at ſupper, her roſe vp ſuddenlye, vn-
locking a ſtrong doze opening into that parlor, and then fet-
teth him downe againe at the table. Anon after this came
forth a Ladie moſt richly attired, in geſture ſo comely, in
countenance ſo louely, in face ſo amiable, and in euerye Ipna-
ment ſo proportionable, that nature might not poſſible worke
more beautie in any creature, or any creature better become
ſuch largeſſe of nature: howbeit, as the hanginge vp of a net
directly againſt the ſonne doth partly obſcure the brightnes
of his beames, ſo penſiuenes ſeemed ſome-what to diminiſh
the featured regardes of his beautifull Paragone.

Harde by was prouided a ſide boorde, and thearf (hauing
made lowe curteſie) ſhe fetcheth her downe: preſently where-
vpon her meſſe was furniſhed onely with two or three broiled
collops cut from of ẏ dead man his quarters, and before her
was ſet water in the ſkull: then one of the ſeruaunts taking
a ribbe out of a bore poundeth the ſame verye ſmall, and
putteth it into the water. Better, or other victuals
than theſe (ſweete ſoule) ſhee got not: and albeit her appe-
tite diſdayned ſo lothſome a dyet, yet eyther muſt ſhe thus
feede, or ſe liue pine without foode: ſo that rather enfeebling
then filling her weake ſtomacke with theſe daynties, ſhee

ſheweth

sheddeth more teares than the quantitye of water shee drinketh, and feedeth as sparingly as her fare was homely, for soone was shee satisfied and as suddenly put againe under lock by her ouer-ungentle Geolet.

No maruell though Atys and Abynados were nowe afresh drowned in their dompes, and had small liking to their meate, who not yet freede of their former feare, sawe new occasions of greater dreade: they pittie the Ladie and doubt their owne safetie, wishing her at large, and themselues out of ieopardie: for (thinke they) seeing this Tyrant handleth thus vngently so goodly a Lady, making the murdered carcases of men meate for those whome hee hath reserued to further miserie, what shall become of vs wretches, howe are we intrapped, and what death hath hee for vs prepared?

The Scythian Lord, perceauing by their outward shews their inwarde feare, cheereth them vp with curteous welcome, saying: Gentlemen, you (perhaps) accustomed to to fare more finely, cannot acquaint your selues to feede here so coursly, yeat wee that are the chiefest in Scythia doe couet no better, and could bee contented with worse, not esteeming any thinge or any more to bee needefull, but onely that and so much as is presently necessarie: full furnished tables (say we) bredeseeble surfetts, but meane repastes make healthfull persons. Wee knowe that fewe thinges suffiseth nature, that superfluitie is a meere vanitie, that ouer much meate sotteth the senses, that heauie cupps make light heades, that curious Cookes make carefull maisters, that prodigalitie endeth in beggerie, and that gluttonie is opposite to vertue: and yeat (alas) what fowle flyeth, what fishe swimmeth, or what beast paseth that man burieth not within his bowels? howbeit man that so often deuoureth death in other creatures, is himselfe at length by death deuoured. With others, change of seruices and costlye intertainement is an occasion of fieldome meetings, slender familiaritie, and therefore small friendshippe: but with vs Welcome couereth the boorde, Temperaunce marshalleth

 the

the dishes, and friendly Acceptance setteth on the boiler: & only he whosoever that seeketh a sum pouous host is in Scythia accounted a sauerie guest. As for dainty foode or any like effeminacie it is as rare heere as elsewhere common. The threnes affright vs not for our money, the mothes harme not our wardrobes, the waspes waste not our ibucates, neither make we our stomacks Apoticaries shops: but hunger maketh all meates to vs right sauerie, and thirst sheare water as pleasant as Nectar. We feede for the most part but of one dishe and that not very daintie, & vse but one coate & that not very costly, and possesse but one house, and that (as you see) homely: yea and I speake nowe of the best, not of the most that lacke of thus well and yeat like as well, not wanting any thing that content themselues with euery thinge: pouerty yeilding vs this aduantage, that whereas for wealth other nations be inuaded with warre, the lacke thereof keepeth vs at home in peace. Neither se are we to fight, if occasion shall serue, for although we shunde all causes of controuersie, yeat knowe we howe to reuenge proffered injuries: and that can all Asia well witnes, whome our bowes haue made three times vnto vs tributarie.

All this while the twoo brethren continue dismayed, by reason of the sights they had lately beheld, taking small delight in those his speaches: where upon their gentle Oste brake of his former argument, and spake to his Guestes as followeth.

CHAP. IX.

¶ The Scythian Lord reporteth his sometimes loue towardes Thetis the forefaid Ladie. His cholericke inuectiue against the leuetie & vanity of Women.

WEre it not (Gentlemen) that I my selfe am partly priuie to some sufficient cause of your sadnesse, I wold endeauour to prescribe you medicine for Melancholye: yet trust me, my selfe a Heranger in an other place as you

are

are here, and seeing that which you haue heere seene, coulde not but imagine and feare as much as you haue feared: but the reason why I haue suffred these your dumps & not resolued your doubtes was, because I gladlye would haue ouerpassed mine owne sorrowes in silence. Herewithall the water stoode in his eyes, and adding a small pause to the shedding of a fewe teares, he thus proceedeth.

You shal vnderstand (qd. he) that the cursed Owner of yonder same dismembred quarters was euermore to me & mine a vowed enemie, by whome I often receaued much skaeth, but could neuer acquite my selfe of his enuie. Know yee also, that the same Ladie whom you beheld euen nowe in this place, was (without superstition bee it spoken) the adored goddesse of mine amorous deuotions, the emperious Mistresse of my subiected heart, and the only she that held me in loyaltie: whose beauty was my blysse, whose sweete countenaunce was my sole comfort, and to whome more than to my owne selfe I liued. Shall I tell you? for her sake was I patient of all labours, venterous of all dangers, carelesse of all coste, and desperate of all deathes: for in loue is nothinge difficile; but as the Hunter plyeth his Houndes, the Falkner his Hawkes, and the Fisher his Angle, forgetting the paine through delight of the passime, so the louer proceedeth his loue esteeming all labours and troubles but trifles in respect of the inning hope of his amorous harueste. What shall I saye? so pleasaunt and stedfast was our mutuall loue, vntill on her parte violated, that it mighte haue been made a question whether of vs was the louer or whiche the beloued, our twoo heartes being (as it were) to cyther bodye common. But light wantons are often ouer firmelye fantased trust hath the fayrest teart leading to treason, and in securitye wee soonest finde sorrowes.

This yonkar (whose guile hath been thus rewarded with a deserued guerdon) when nowe no farther hope was lefte for the exercise of his malicious madnes against me, applied

then.

then mine owne weapons to worke vnto my selfe wounds solliciting secretly by louing, nay lustfull, tables this wicked woman: Wicked may I well terme her and woman, for that sext is an apt Etymologia. Ah, gentlemen, or euer I passe to my penaunce, which will be the ripping vp of Thetis her inconstancie, eyther suffer me to chewe vppon my melancholie and so (perhaps) chooke, or else to giue passage to my choler so, happely, to ease mine hart with a chaufe: which chaufe I wish may be to you a caution, as the cause thereof is to me a corasiue: for though Thetis is not euery woman, yeat followeth it not but that any woman may proue a Thetis, and then such women might iustly be termed monsters in nature, as some (how cunningly or curiously I iudge not) doe philosophically note them. But what talke I of their natures, that can tell much more of their manees? O that I had ben more carefull in auoyding their companie, and lesse cunning in deciphering their conditions. What else are they (I accuse not al, & may not excuse a many) but ineuitable plagues, conuenient noysances, naturall temptations, couited calamities, houshold hostilitie, & delectable detraments: whom we cannot want without offence to the Gods, nor hold without damage to our owne parsons: if she be fayre she is wooed and reddily checketh, if foule she wooeth and euer choaketh: Good wine lacketh not tasters nor faire women sutors, with an easie price and an iuie bush bad wine also is vtered: if she be poore then ouer chargeable to him that shall keepe her, and then shee flincheth: if rich, ouercurious for him that shall haue her, & then she fleeceth: her haire bought, her gestures inforced, her lookes premeditated, her backe bolstred, her breasts and middle splented, and then is she in fashion, when most out of fashion. Besides her attire, eies hath shee to entise, teares to excuse, lockes to attract, smiles to flatter, embracements to prouoke, resistance to yeilde, frownes to delaye, beckes to recall, lippes to inchaunt, kisses to enflame, and all these to poyson: applying to euery member and motion a seuerall art. Shee pryeth in her glasse

glaſſe like an Ape to preſſe her in her geſtures like a puppet, but being preſſed, as ſhee preſumeth to the purpoſe, peat with ſhee but perpetuance with ease, and weare ſeeme with faſhion, ſhe is like to the glow-worme, that is bright in the darke, and blacke in the day time. Shee diſcouereth that ſometimes willingly which ſhee would ſeeme to haue done vnwillingly, ſhee promiſeth one thing and performeth another, profeſſeth chaſtitie but practiſeth the contrary: loue her and you looſe her, make ſtrange and you winne her, offer and ſhee diſdaineth, denie and ſhee doth preſſe her and ſhee pleaſeth, deſpiſe her and ſhee pineth, but (O mirth) if taken tardie, then her tongue vttereth ſuch arte, that rather ſhee auoydeth cunningly the ſuſpition, or maketh the matter doubtfull in ſuſpence. Teares hath ſhee at commaundement, and thoſe of two ſorts, weeping often for anger, and ſeldome for ſorrow, of her two extreames, Loue and Hate, her loue is a minute, but her hate a monument: As readily doth ſhee leaue as raſhly ſhe doth loue, being as generally mutable as deſirous of variety, changing for pleaſure, but chuſing for profit: and if at one time ſhee hath twentie ſundrie Cheuers ſhee can pleaſe each man with a contrary countenance, and diſmiſſe them all at her pleaſure, hauing ſifted their ſences and ſoaked them of their ſubſtance. For ſmall goodnes ſhee claymeth great commendations, but for great euill hateth any conteinement: hauing charge ouer all ſhee complayneth of ſeruitude, being abridged of parte ſhee exclayneth of miſtruſt, if ſhee bee wiſe (at the leaſt in her owne conceit) then with a preſſiſe ſingularitie ſhee will ouer-rule all, if fooliſh, then through a peruiſh ſimplicitie ſhee will not be ruled at all, either too brauely minded, or too baſely mannered, opinionate and comberſome. Politicklie is ſhee wonne, and peruiſhly is ſhe loſt, either doth not the rich mans dalliances ſeede her diet, or the poore mans diet ſtarue her dalliances: euermore imperious, impatient, importunate, ſelfe-willed, thankeleſſe, and full of ſtrange. Shunne (young men) I ſay ſhun (except one of golden tappes you will drinke poyſoned draughts) to

be guests in the guiles of these sweete-sower Panthars: otherwise make account to find them such wayward fooles to please, and such foolish wantons being pleased, that if in winning they did trauell you, in wearing they will vtterlye tire you. But see, lauish fellowe, howe rashly my tongue runneth counter? and ouer-much choler (I feare me) hath so mistempered my wits, that it is doubtfull whether I haue vsed decorum in wordes: If therefore any modest matron, wife, or mayden were heere present, and would not pardon my glibbe tongue in respect of my gauled hart (for loosers should haue leaue to chaufe) then would I contentedly beare a fagot for any probable heresie.

CHAP. X.

¶ He sheweth by what meanes lust breedeth, increaseth, and what it affecteth.

This my digression, gentlemen (qd. the Scythian Lorde) hath longer detayned your teeth from your victuals, then the discourse it selfe might haue displeased your eares for the villanie: yeat would I borrow your patience a little farther: for as I haue spoke somewhat of the infirmitie of ẏ feminine sexe, so would I briefly touch ẏ impietie of lust, by both which I haue been wronged, & by both which you may be warned.

From this fretting frenzie, though of most vile and base condition, neither the mightie Potentate, nor the meane pezant, or scarce any of either Sext haue been or be exempted. And the reason why it so easily ouercommeth and so extreamely outrageth, is for that it leadeth men euen with willing cordes to the pleasant court of vanitie, being garded thether by conduct of Aboundance and Prosperitie: in which court Gluttonie doth diet them, Lecherie doth chamber thē, Pride doth apparell them, Sloth doth accompanie them, and Follie in all thinges followeth their humours: But whilest Tediousnesse doth heere perswade that none maye come to heauen vnlesse barefooted vpon sharpe Thornes, Se-

curitie

Euritie drineth on his sleepie Chariot and bringeth them to Hell, as it were on soft Featherheds. Like as fier worketh wood altogether into fier, so Lust wholy alienateth man into lasciuiousnesse: for if once it entreth the eie, it anon scaleth the head, and at length sacketh the heart: and then (alas) the heart by degrees delighteth, consenteth, fulfilleth, continueth, confirmeth, commendeth, and not (but too too late) repenteth the act. Which lasciuious passion, besides that that it bringeth wealth to want, it also effeminates the minde, enfeebleth the body, slandereth the person, and endangereth the soule: yea it leaueth the bodie in such debilitie that it maketh the same altogether vnapt to any good action, and so insecreth the minde, that it vtterly disharboreth euen the least motion to amendment, so that body, mind, and man, become wholy vitious: it hauing forerunners, Heate and Wantonnesse: companions Securilitie and Uncleannesse: pursuers, Greefe and Repentance: whose matter is Gluttonie, whose flame is Pride, whose sparckles is Ribaldrie, whose smoke is Infamie, whose Embers is Filthinesse, and whose ashes is heauens losse, and hells purchase: And albeit the pleasure passeth away in a trise, no sooner done but forgotten, and the punishment be permanent, yeat so delightfull is the present sweete, that we neuer remember the following sower. Yt resteth then that I aduertise you of tryed medycine to applye to this vntoward maladie.

CHAP. XI.

¶ He prescribeth rules against Lasciuiousnes.

BEleeue me, my Guests, for ẏ auoiding both ẏ mischiefe it selfe & the inconuenience growing thereby, six rules are especially to be obserued as maximies. The first wherof is Sobrietie in diet, for it is often seene ẏ in wine many things are done vnaduisedlye, Saturitie working accesse to veritie, & they haue been at a wanton banquet willingly conquered, that but euen nowe dishamed parlie with the Assaylent.

The second is some bodily labour or [illegible] exercise in some honest action, whereby is prevented all such lewd toyes and vaine meditations, wherewith the minde (neuer but well or euilly occupied) is easily entised: for idlenesse is to aliuing man a sepulchre, but labour is the mindes medicine. The third is decentnesse in attire and outward ornaments, the which wee are to vse for colde, not for colour, as couerings of our nakednesse, not as allurements to licentiousnes: for why? to intend is to trespasse, to will is to worke, and externally to giue occasion is dangerous. The fourth is discreetly to restraine the libertie of our Sences: not so to looke on the sunne that we dim our eies with the brightnesse, not so to touch the berrie that we draw blood with the briet, not so to tast honie that we be stung of the Bee, not so to heare melodie that we neglect modestie, nor so to smell sweet odours that wee sente not vnsauorie ordours: but so to see, touche, taste, heare, and smell the entising lullabies of beautie and flattering preparatiues to Venus, that by forecasting the inconuenience we may the easilier escape the mischiefe: for repentance was neuer but a looser. The fift is, Sieldome wordes, and those with sobrietie: not by euill speeches to corrupt good manners: for what contenteth the eare, to that readily consenteth the heart: And because (if for no other cause) he that is still accustomed to speake ill, is by good reason suspected not to doe well, Ribaldrie is therefore not slightly to be reprooued: for well it is said, that the mindes Image is the tongue, and sometimes of wordes spoken but in meriment haue proceeded occasions working to a mischiefe. The sixt and last is, to conquer opportunitie whensoeuer we are offered the executing of our purposed lewdnesse: for albeit wee finde the person pliant to performe, the place apt for performance, and the time conuenient for performing, yeat at that very instant should we remember, that we ought not to doe all that we would, nor so much as we may, but only that which is lawfull and honest: otherwise wherein differ we from vnreasonable Creatures? But (my good

guests)

guests) for so much as I cannot but confesse that this inordinate petulancie, delightfull euill, and sweet poyson, Lust, is far more easie to be controuled of all, than corrected of any one, as an infirmitie of our corrupt flesh, and the opposite thereof more currant in praise than conuersant in practise, I will therefore here lay a straw, and proceede to the matter from which I haue thus far digressed.

CHAP. XII.

¶ Of Thetis her disloyaltie: and by what chance the Scythian Lord escaped the vnsuspected Conspiracie of her and Armatrites.

ARmatrites and Thetis (for Armatrites was his name) what by sending and resending of often tables and tokens (as I began to tell you) had concluded vpon their dishonest enterprise, & making sure of mine absence, had many mettings at this my Castle: where not simplie contenting themselues with acted lust, they had also complotted howe to haue murdered me. The night came wherein my death was determined, in which Stratagem disloyall Thetis should haue done execution. But as we lay a-bed amorously toying, she suddenly fetched a deepe sighe, great plentie of teares then also brasting from out her eyes: whereat I no lesse amazed than greeued, as he that esteemed himselfe so long distempered whilst I thought her in any thing disturbed, making my preparatiue with a payre or leash of kisses, did earnestlye demaunde the cause of such her passions: but shee not able of a long time to vtter any worde for weeping, at length clasping her arms about mine neck & repaying my kisses with more thē double interest, shifted mee off with this sleeuelesse answere. My loving Lord (qd. shee) for so much as to disclose the cause of these mine extraordinarie teares, the which priuatlye concerne mine owne selfe and nothing at all touch you, would be but ye new remembrance of an old sorrow, ye which

by silence maye sue in time suppressed, by resight all in memorie the deeper Impressed, maye it therefore please you of pardon in that I am bewilling to rehearse that which I would (if it might bee) so willingly forget. I being blinded with loue, and ouertaken with his dalyaunces, and not minding then to vrge her any further then should stand with her owne contentment, questioned her no longer as touching this matter: but for that I perceaued her minde to bee perplexed, I my selfe was wonderfully disquieted, and so lay musing of all that night without sleeping any one winke. Sing (beleeue me) if euer any man were beholding to sorrow, then I of all other haue best cause to commend sorrow, for it kept me awake and waking aliue. For albeit her mischiuous minde (I wot not howe relenting) did seeme nowe almost reclaimed from such her murtherous intent, yeat (as she hee selfe afterwards confessed) her new and irreuocable yeale to Armatrites had so ouer-mastred reason, that after a long combat betwixt pittie and crueltie, as shee that would not haue attempted any thinge to the annoying of mine coulde shee otherwise haue attayned to the enioying of him, was fully resolued to haue finished my life, if happily of all that night she had taken me napping. But I not doubting at all any such wrong measure, hauing ouer night appointed with my huntesmen to be early stirring, as soone therefore as day appeared, taking a louers leaue an hundred times at her lips, leauing her a bed departed towards the woodes: whereby a straunge chaunce (as I shall now tell you) I got intelligence of such their false packing.

CHAP. XIII.

¶ How the Scythian Lord by the rude Salutation of Armatrites his Concubine vnderstoode of the euill that was practized against him.

ARmatrites had a verye beautifull Concubine, who (I know

knowe not by what meanes) finding out the newe haunt that her sweete-hart vsed to Thetis, and seeing her selfe to be now scanted of that pleasure which before time she possessed, when by no meanes she could entise home againe Armatrites, waxed then starke mad with anger: and not minding to die in his debt that so discurteously had giuen her the gleeke, but enuying alike both him and his new Choyses, sought opportunitie to reuenge her selfe on them both. Not far had I gon, but that I mette her posting toward this place, and with these homely salutations she began our acquaintance.

Thinke not thou Wittole (qd. shee) that thy gay titles or thine authoritie in these parts shall so hinder my tongue but that I dare to informe thee a troth: how commeth it to passe that thou which art so zealous in doing iustice abroade, art now so partiall in winking on vices at home? If the law maker may also be a law breaker, it will be to small purpose ẏ I accuse thee of the often meetings of Armatrites & Thetis at thy Castell: But if the breach of lawe in the magistrate is more offensiue than in ẏ meane subiect (for that by his course the vnskilfull companie are chiefly directed) then tel me (thou Pandar) how canst thou excuse thy selfe of iniustice, or auoyd the reproche of this trumperie. What, is it possible that the auncient enmitie so long time continued betwixt Armatrites and thee, should thus suddenly be grown to so familiar an attonement, as that thou canst be contented not only of an olde foe to make a new friend, but also so kind hearted as to holde Thetis with him in commõ? thou challẽging thy propertie by night, and he chambering her as properly by daye: it is (belike) his office to keepe her warme in bed, whilst thou (for thy head as warrãtable as thy game) art hunting abrode. And lookest thou, man, so grimb as if thou wert offended I should charge thee so deepely: doest thou blush, as if but euen now ashame of ẏ bawdery? or art thou dum, as thou wouldst plead ignorance in a matter so manifest? if thou art offended, I am careles of thy displeasure, if ashamed, it is not without good occasiõ, if thou hast been or diddest coũterfeite to be ignorant,

now say not but thou art sufficiently warned, yea so warned, that euen now the time serueth for triall of this that I haue told thee. What therefore doth let (vnlesse thou art well ynough pleased with such patcherie) to proceede in punishment against so detestable harlots? Oh that I had the slitting of the strumpets nose, & these nayles of mine the scratching out of both their eies.

CHAP. XIIII.

How the Scythian, taking tardy the Leachers, dealeth by eyther.

VVhilst she yet persisted in harping forth this and such like vntuneable hermonie, I neither rashly crediting the vnsuspected accusation, neither yet obstinately yeilding to the partialitie of mine owne affection, leauing her in the middle of this her mad musick, returned home long or euer I was looked for, & rushing suddenly into chamber I founde the naughtie packes in bedde together. They perceiuing me, and being euill apayed of the presence of so boysterous a Chamberlaine, began to reare themselues vpright in the bed: but as Armatrites sate hanging downe his head, as it were dead in ẏ neast, not so much ashamed of the beastly fact wherwithall he was taken, as fearing the disaduantage whereunto his euill fortune had now brought him, I at one sweepe pared off his head, euen at his sweete-hearts side. She looking for the like, and I meaning no lesse, sitting bathed in ẏ gushing-out blood of her paramour, and bitterly bewayling the breach of her loyalty towardes me, did of her owne accorde constantly humble her selfe to dye, offering her naked breast to bee pearced of my threatning weapon. But had I the hart (thinke you) to bestow my weapon in that beautifull bosome of hers which I accounted euen now the increase of my solace and decrease of my sorrowes? no na (howsoeuer you thinke my head worthy or vnworthy the arming) yet will I not omit a veritie: thrise my heart fully purposed her death

an

and thryse mine hande weelded the Weapon to haue bereft her of life, but thrise both heart, & hand fainted and fayled in performance thereof. In the ende, casting downe my partiall weapon, and withdrawing my selfe into an other chamber, after that I had a good while deliberated of the matter, & ouer childishlye lamented the manner, I resolued vpon this determination, that is, that the miserable woman should still liue, detesting neuerthelesse vtterly to dispence with her lewdnesse; and therefore for punishment I enioyned her this pennance, neuer to tast any other sustenance, vntill time she hath buried within her owne bowels the whole carcasse of her lybidanous parramour. This pennance in my dispeasure haue I vnaduisedly vowed, and this vowe at more leasure haue I repented, for the suffring is not greater to her, then the sighte thereof greeuous to me: but forasmuch as vowes made to the Gods are not to be reuoked at the discretion of men, I esteeme it better that she by correction become hereafter penitent, than that I by infringing my oath, and shee by escaping vnpunished, become either of vs reprobate.

Thus the Scythian Lorde, with wet cheekes, finished his tale, and Atys and Abynados were freed of further dreade, though not a little greeued of so amiable a Ladye her infelicitie.

But after their honorable host had frankly giuen in commaundement that the emptied booles shoulde bee pentifullye controwled, and that the wine with often quaffing had nowe animated their courages, in the end the parsonable proportiō of Thetis was rather wantonly remembred, than her penance by them with any extraordinary pitie regarded. And to conclude what with long watching and deepe drinking, sufficient quarrell being ministred to the pillow, ech man did sacrifice to the God of Ebona, vnder the harmelesse protection of whose drowsie deitie I now leauethem.

But if any shall inquire farther as concerning Thetis, my answers must thē rellish after the Oracle at Delphos, that euermore left the certaintie of thinges to vncertaine euentes,

 and

and howsoeuer it happed with or contrarie to expectation, yeat still the euent made good the oracle: it may be, and perhaps not, that hereafter yee may heare more of Thetis, vntill when, take what I render for a full payment, and what I thus promise as a desperate debt.

In the meane time bringe desirous to keepe others waking with some exercise that may happely tende to their sollace, whilest I leaue Arys and Abynados sleeping, as the best remedie for their surfets, I shall make restitall of some matters canuased a shipboorde, whilest they twoo are thus intertained of the Scythian.

Belopares

Belopares.

CHAP. XIIII.

¶ Howe the abſence of Atys and Abynados, cauſing their friends a ſhipbord to doubt of their ſafetie, occaſioned the one ſpeake of the incommodities of ſea-faring and trauell.

Calamus tertius.

THe long tarriance of Atys and Abynados being thus intertayned at the Caſtell, cauſed thoſe in the ſhip diuerſly to deſcant of ꝑ matter, euerie man giuing a ſeuerall verdict as touching the preſumed cauſe of their abſence: and by how much they were aſſured of the fierce manners of the Scythians, by ſo much they feared the ſafetie of the two brethren. But taking the whole companie of the ſouldiers and ſaylers aboard to their naturall reſt, you ſhall be partakers, only of the communication that paſſed betweene the Maiſter, the maiſters-mate, and the Pylot, whileſt theſe three, not vppon any neceſſarie conſtraint, but of their voluntarie conſent, vndertooke to furniſhe the watch for that night in their owne perſons.

The Moone wanted not hing of her parfit light, the clearneſſe of the ſkie and brightnes of the ſtarres adding as it were a ſecond Moone in the firmament, tempeſtuous Orion threatned no ſtorme, neither was any aier or element contrarie to a generall calme, theſe comforters being in part

counterchecks against the discomfortable coniectures of the three carefull watchmen, moued them in walking al ye night vp and downe on the hatches, to discourse many arguments, and participate diuerse straunge aduentures: and after the ripping vp of many daungers, distresses, and shipwrackes which themselues before time had hardlye escaped the euill fortune of Sorares and his companie, after whom they were then to enquire, with the present absence of Atys and Abynados then newly missing, did giue occasion vnto the Mayssers mate to burst out into these speeches.

My poore parents (qd. he) dying long agoe, left me to the wide worlde, a rawe thinge God wot, and verie yong, without either wealth, friendes, or wit: so that being left in this daungerous estate, I continued many yeares as desperate a race, & had I not chanced by hap-hassard, before my too much libertie had made me ripe for the rope, to haue gotten into a gallie, I had (no doubt) eare this daye, with the prise of my necke, payed tribute to the gallowes: and therefore considering that I haue begun sea-faring in youth childishly, haue practised since desperatly, and must now continewe it of necessitie. I neede not greatlye blushe though I speake somewhat against mine owne profession, to the practise whereof I haue been thus by chaunce-medly constrayned: but were mine abilitie such that I could liue and leaue it, as I am forward to disable and mislike it, I would sooner make choise to liue in a poore Cottage within the compasse of one small village, than accept (if it might be) a Charter to compasse the great and rich Ocean. But leauing to speake of my selfe, I cannot muse enough at those wilde yonglinges or witlesse fondlings, whom neither ye affaires of their prince or contrie compelleth, want of libertie at home constraineth, lacke of maintenance inforceth, traffique abroade occasioneth, hope of profit intyseth, or any other necessarie cause procureth thereunto, can notwithstanding bee contented to leaue their natiue country and parents in whom and by whom they haue been bread and fostered, their wife and children vnto whome they

are

are by law and nature vnited, their friends and kinsfolke at whose handes they are to receiue counsell and comfort, and in straunge countries to consume that their liuelyhood and substaunce, which them selues, lyuing, might with ioy possesse, and, dead, their posteritie should by law inherit. Being onely caryed away with a fond desire to view vnknowne nations and curious monuments: setting forwardes iollytie, but sayling foorth in ieopardie, launching out in their ruffes, but hayling in in their ragges: yea they are ignorant, that when after this order they fraught the shipp with their wealth, they vnballace their heads of wit: exchanging their warme gownes for cold iackes, their soft pillowes for hard couches, their sweete chambers for stinking cabbens, their brand walkes for the bleake hatches, their sweete wine for stale water, and their fine dainties for grosse dyets, if sicknes falleth (which sieldome fayleth) Phisitions loue not ẏ seas, and therefore phisicke not to be founde in shippes, as for Chirurgions their skill is in woundes, but not in vrines, so that the poore patient hath (perhaps) leaue to liue as long as hee may, and no man letteth him to die as soone as hee will: and then as ẏ sea is his sepulchre, so perchaunce a Rascals purse is his treasurie. Neither doth so happie an end as this happen to all, for sometimes the ship runneth a ground, & then both ship and man perish: sometimes it lighteth on a rocke, and then speede they no better: sometimes they are boorded by Pyrates, and then it hapneth them worser: sometime through longe tempest, victuals consume and they famish: sometimes a storme driueth them perforce vpon the costes of their enemies, who eyther make them bondslaues, or (which is rather to bee wished) dispatch them with torments: sometimes are they cast a shoare, eyther in desertes where wilde beasts deuoure them, or else among such people as make food of their carcases: sometimes the meeting billowes doe cleane ouer whelme them: sometimes the following waues do quite ouer turne them, and euermore a thinne boorde onelye is betwixt them and perishing: so that what with these, and ma-

ny such lamentable accidents are they continuallye en
gered, the feare much more tormenting than the death i
would be grieuous. And yeat (forsooth) all these not
standing, some in a brauerie must sayle vnto Mymphis,
to viewe the Piramides: some vnto Babilon, to see the v
of Semiramis: some vnto Caria, to gaze on Mansol
tombe: some vnto Ephesus, to beholde the temple of D
some vnto the Isle Pharos, to the tower Pharos; some
Olympia, to the yuorie image of Iupiter: some vnto Rh
to the monstrous stature of Phœbus: some into one cou
and some into another, and all in the end returning (i
they returne) more bitten with their expences, then be
by their experience: ouer-maistred by straunge man
that could not be maisters of their owne affections. F
they wilfully leaue their friendes and Countrie, so (wh
ten hapneth) vnwittingly they forsake their Gods an
gion: if in Assiria they adored Adad and Adargatin, in
lon Belus, and in Caldia Ori masda: the same must wo
in Egypt Osyris, and Isis, in Persia Mithra, in Ausoni
nus, in Mesopotamia, or Hebron a God called Iehoua
as in these, so amongst ech sundry people must a peculi
be adored: so that let them account of the rest to be but
and trifles, yeat this cannot be but a scruple to their con
ces. And as after this manner their religion is alte
in like sort their manners proue alienated: being infor
rather easilie intysed, to applie their behauiour accord
the seuerall places of their present aboade: in Persia to
in brauerie, else no man for their companie: in Scythia
ouer beggerly, else too proud for their societie: in Ara
follow Venerie, else excluded their familiaritie: to be
in Parthia they must vomit with drinking, in Thratia
filching, in Lydia practise gaming, in Sibaria sleepe an
nes, in Caspia crueltie and dissembling &c. Neither i
easie matter to pacifie their natiue Gods, whose worsh
they haue thus estradnged, or to leaue those vices whic
such facilitie they haue learned: but rather it is to bee

ted, that by the first they shall bee vnwillingly cast behinde, whilest by the latter they are willingly ouer-taken: for vanitie which is sought for so eagerly is not shaken off so easily, vertue seeming painefull, and therefore reiected euen in the bloome, but vice pleasaunt, and therefore affected euen in the fruit. Neyther are these all the euills that growe by such trauells, for this vnaduised Venteror at home-retunre of a Chapman becommeth a Marchaunt, vsing in his owne countrie outlandish vtterance, there to make retunre of his far-fetched vices: And as one rotten sheepe infecteth be it neuer so great a flock, so one new-fangled Traueler impoisoneth be it neuer so many folke: and therefore it followeth, that such traueling is harmefull to the Traueler him selfe, hurtfull to others, and.

CHAP. XV.

¶ How the Maister approueth sea-faring and trauell to bee commodious and commendable: the Pylot, qualyfying the controuersie, &c.

NAy (qd. the Maister, intercepting his wordes) wee haue enough and too much of your ands & yfs, vnlesse marshalled after a better order: why how nowe Belopares (so was his name) hast thou thy selfe confessed that the gally saued thee from the gallowes, & yeat wilt thou deliuer so badly of sea-farers? art thou a sayler, & yeat of saylers a scorner? and doe the seas bring thee thy liuing, & the same also breede thy misliking? trust me hadst thou hidden thy base petegree, yeat shoulde we haue conceiued in our mindes what wee had not receiued in our eares. Thou oughtest (Belopares) to obserue, that as men are borne vnder diuerse plannets, so are they of diuerse dispositions, not all (ywis) tender harted Venerians, nor slow-backed Saturnists, but some are valiant minded Iouialists, and others wise

Amplifying

imprising Mercurialists, &c. who with their vallour can make eth climate their countrie, or with their wisedom shift warely in euery company, or else (if the worst fall) conquer crosse fortune with Magnanimitie. Thou sayest they leaue great felicitie at home, and commit themselues to much miserye abroade, reckoning that for a follie, which in deede is a rare vertue: for what greater vertue than to dispise inchaunting pleasures, I meane pompe & riches the nurses of sensuality? which be eyther got by wrong, spent by ryot, kept with care, consumed by enuie, or lost by casualties: so that (if comparison shoulde bee made) I might prooue that the seas are not more displeasing for perils, than the land perilous for pleasures: to attaine, and maintaine whiche pleasures what mischiefes maye bee numbred that are not there attempted? Men theare for the most parte are either idle and so vtterly vnprofitable, or else neither idle nor wel occupyed: some fall to banquets with the appurtenaunces, & some to bickering with the inconueniences: one blazeth the borowed beautie of some Circeis, another deformeth himselfe with fashions: the Vsurer hee fleeceth, if not fleaeth the gentleman: ye gentleman he racketh, if not ouer-reacheth the farmer: the farmer he hourdeth and hoysteth the markets, euerie man shifteth for one, and that one sitteth on the skirts of some other, and himselfe in his owne light: in sewe, the court wanteth not flatterers, nor the citie extortioners, the Priest auarice, nor the Laitie Ambition, the barres plaintes, nor the benches delayes, temples Non-residents, nor Theatres superattendants, schooles sectes, nor lawes quillits, Hermaphrodits maintenance, nor Souldiers immunity, good men maligners, nor ill men bolsterers, Tormerants crueltie, nor Beggars impatience, the rich mallice, nor the poore miserie Brothels ribalds, nor Prisons offendors, the Diuell worke nor the Gallowes vse: and yeat for breuitie I omit a milion of mischiefes, whereof in the end, to their owne preiudice, the Actors onlye feele the accidents. Because therefore that Beautie bewitcheth none but her busie Inspectors, Couetous

nes catcheth none but such as are hopled with golden fetters, Gluttonie entertaineth none but currant guests to his banquets, nor Pride pranketh vp any but intruding Courtiers, seeing (I say) that by following the tract wee fall into the trappe, and by senting the bayt we swallowe the baine, haue not those (thinke you) reason? are not they happie? naye are not they to bee honoured? that eschewing these molifying instigations to vanitie, and ensuing mortifying contemplations to eternitie, loth such securitie in braue cities and beautifull pallaices, & like better a life solitarie amidst the rough seas & wrestling surges: wheare there faire fingers are not (as occasion serueth) priuiledged the foule cables, so that their handes being exercised with labours, their thoughts bee not enueigled with idle fantasies: and the rather for that opportunitie being taken away, no hope remaineth here to practise what vainely they might purpose: but on the Seas in a calme they vse mirth with modestie, in a storme they pray patiently, and at all times liue as if they should die hourely: and if any perill happen, then such perill (say I) prepareth saints to Heauen, whereas pleasures (feele some) present foules to hell. And yeat (Belopares) let vs not aggrauate the daunger otherwise then the case requireth, for as I cannot denye but that perils happen here sometime, so (if I shall speake no more then troth) I must saye they chaunce but sieldome: for which of vs three, that haue been saylers almost all our dayes, cannot alreadye assure our selues to dye loaden with as many white heares, as commonlye the oldest Citizen that dyeth not so much as hauing viewed the Seas. Thou also giuest out, that they must worshippe newe Gods, and forsake their olde religion, but I say that wise Trauailers passe by safe-conduct, and amongst their league friendes are from those matters exempted, eyther keeping aloofe from where they doubt in these thinges to bee sifted, or else being there rashlye or violently ariued, matters may bee auoyded with such discretion, that without preiudice to their Gods, or offence to their owne consciences, they

may reuerently pray in a straung temple to their know
whose altars are absent, and yeat doe no reuerence at al
vnkno yne God whose Image is present: for though the
necessitie that they kneele by the shrine, yeat is it not ne
rie that they kisse the Saint: in zeale not in shewe consi
deuotion, and a speedie returne is in such case the surest
taunce: or if sifted beyond godsforbod, then a godly ma
domie is a glorious enlargement. Of whom, I pray
should wee censure well, yf not of Trauelers? I saye
land-leapers (whereof in deede there are not a fewe w
leaue their countrie not for the number of vices which
abound, but for the misliking of a fewe vertues which
are neyther willing nor able to obaye, such as sucke co
tion as faste from the vitious as the Toade poison from
earth) but I meane of men betaking themselues to pain
trauels, eyther by their prowes and actiuitie (wantin
like occasion at home) to purchase renowne: by their s
venter to discouer obscure people and places beneficia
themselues and commodious to their countries, or elsi
pon any other good or the same intentions before remem
yea were it no more then to get experience, learne langu
or to auoyde idlenesse: for such as are these men do
peize their prosperitie by the quantitie of the externall
sures they forgoe, but by the qualitie of the eternall ve
they pursue. As for the sundry vices frequented in
countryes by thee seuerally named, my answere is, th
of bitter shells we haue sweete kernels, that in one & the
place are had presidents both of vice and vertue; & one a
same man may be holpen or hindered by eyther exampl
well disposed Trauailer doth learne to immitate in the
their commendable qualities, and to abhorre in the bad
condemnable maners, applying both presidents, good, &
to one vertuous purpose. More might I say (Belopare
more would I say, were it not that I know y lawdable
to be of sufficiency ynough not only to contend, but also
fend it selfe, against all detractions whatsoeuer: and th

I conclude, such a Trauailer is wel aduised at his going out, well amended at his returning home, profitable to himselfe, not preiudiciall to others, but well meriting of all.

Heay, qd. the Pylot (vndertaking to bee a stickler in the strife) heere is a businesse (in deede) as if all the Seas were nothing but swallowing whirlepooles, and all the shoare nothing but consuming whirlewinds: But, might I moderate your contention, you should deuide this sentence betwixt you, that is, that neither sea nor shoare are lesse perilous the one than the other, and yeat neither of both damnifying farther than is permitted by ineuitable Destinie, or more truly God the Giuer & Guider of destinies: who hauing made both lãd, seas, and all therein, and with them vs, hath (no doubt) reserued to himselfe the prerogatiue of a Creator ouer his creatures, to dispose of all things after his owne pleasure: neither do I thinke there is any necessitie that the Trauailer or any other violently become vitious, except the same volentarilye desist to be vertuous. Neuerthelesse I dare not be curious in these matters that cãnot yeild any absolute reasõ of the members, motions, and sences which I dayly carrie about me in mine owne body, neither yet of a Thousand things inferiour to my selfe: only let it suffise that we receiue, and receauing, let vs be thankfull to the Gods that are the giuers, and wholy to their significant and secret wills referre all our actions: least by being ouer-curious, from the Boone we fall into the myre, and not only loose our labour, but for presumption bee punished with Prometheus. It shall bee lesse necessarie that we be well learned than that we haue well liued, & he knoweth ynough that knoweth himselfe not to know any thing: and therefore (balking such laborinths) suffer me, I pray you, to cut off your argumentes with a familiar example or two not much impertinent to this your present controuersie, whereof I my selfe haue been no small parte, and wherein (perhaps) myne experience maye vrge more than all your arguments.

CHAP. XVI.

¶ The Pylot, to ſhew how daungers are no leſſe incident to men on the ſhoare than at the Seas, ſpeaketh his owne experience.

WHilſt I was yeat a Lad and kept in India with my Father, I chanced to wander into a great deſert not far from home, whearе childiſhly colting vp and downe, on a ſudden a terrible Lioneſſe had caught mee betwixt her pawes: well might I crie out for helpe, but not any creature was in way to heare. The Lioneſſe hauing whelpes not farre from the place where ſhe had thus founde me, and minding (belike) to haue made a merrie banquet amongſt her yong vipers, hapled me apace with their churliſh Clawes, (wherewithal ſhe pinched me ſhrewdly) towardes her denne. But, ſee the chaunce, an other fierce Lioneſſe happed to range that way, who meeting betwixt that and home with my boyſtrous hoſteſſe & mother bloodie gueſt, preſuming at the leaſt wiſe to be a partner if not a ſole poſſeſſor of ſo dilycate a booty, began to catch at my taple, thinking ſo by maine force to haue recouered mee out of the others clawes: but my firſt Cuſtomer, loth to forgo her cariage, one while ſtanding vpon me and an other while traurſing rounde about mee, reſcued mee of a long time by that meanes. In the end eyther of them being ſo much the more eager by how much they both ſuffred for foode, began ſo fiercely to aſſaile eche the other, that through earneſtneſſe of fighting they had withdrawn themſelues from me a great diſtance of ground: I ſeeing that, & (as yong as I was not letting ſlip that aduantage, feare making mee forget how pitifully I was wounded) did ſtart vp in a triſe & was gone in a turne, neuer daring to loke behind me vntil I had gotten my Fathers houſe ouer my head, leauing the two Lyons miſerably tugging & one tearing an other, either of thē purpoſing to haue deuoured mee, whilſt (thankfully be it ſpoken) had thus happily

happily deceiued the both of which hard escape, these scars (he shewed them scarrs) will be [illegible] my life, mindfull tokens. Thus haue you heard how strangly my life was preserued on ye land, and now shall you heare how miraculously I escaped death on the seas.

CHAP. XVII.

¶ The Pylot also reporteth a storie of his experienced danger and distresse on the Seas.

The first, and the worst voyage that euer I made was into Cicyona, to shew the horrors whereof words will rather seeme difficile than matter defective. Three days we sayled with a fauourable wind, but on the fourth, arose as it were a foggie mist from out the seas, anon the blackness of the skye might not be seene for ye darknesse of the ayre: dreadful flashes of lightning seemed to haue fired the Seas, terrible vollies of Thunder threatned the shaking of ye heauens & sundering of ye earth, showres of raine poured downe as if there should haue ben a second generall Inundation, the rowing winds skuffle so boisterously from ech corner as if Boreas, Auster, Zephirus, & Eurus, had ben at ods within themselues or at one againe vs and our selues, wretches, were at our wits end, neither seing for ye darkness hearing for the dyn how any thing should be amended, & yeat too too well knew wee that euery thing was amisse. One while the ship mounteth so high that scarcelye wee discerne the hollowe waues from aloft, an other while it sinketh so low that hardly we discrie the tops of ouer-pearing Billowes from beneath, & though we did account it mid-day by course of ye time, yeat might we compare it to midnight by occasion of the storme: what shall I say? not one of vs knew what to do, and yeat euerye man was doing some-thing, one plyeth the pompe vntill for wearinesse he fainteth, another ladeth out water vntill for weakenesse hee falleth, this man (in vaine) repaireth the cracking tacklings, that man (at an aduenture) renteth down the sailes, some poure forth their prayers,

ers, some vnpatiently tormant their owne persons, and
vowe weete insence and oblations: the married man be
a pitifull farewell to his absent wife & children, the bad
nameth his parents, friends, & whom he best loueth her
deth on fast clinging to a loose bord, there another clean
ped to abide his chance, & euery man disorderly did that
wherunto the extremity of his passiõ did presently direct
Diuers days together were wethus cõtinually tossed, h
by chance sea-roome at will, but at the last our ship bei
uen perforce vpon a shallow stacke so fast that the only
remaining was to vnballace it, the Golde, Jewels, p
stuffe and Treasure then cast into the seas being of an i
able estimate: but to tell you to whom the same appert
& to what vse they should haue been imploied, requirer
long a discourse for this time, the which hereafter at th
leasure you shall also vnderstand. Vnualuable (as I sai
the Treasure then floung ouer-boorde, more than suffic
haue ransomed a King from the captiuitie of his foes, b
thing at all helping to redeeme vs from the cruelties of
yeat might we haue gotten our ship afloate with that q
(alas) that not sufficing, we were also constrained to ca
boorde our prouigion of victuals and so getting at leng
to the deepe, our ship, that now wanted her full Ballac
a fresh in far worses sort than before, tossed among ye T
with the blustring Tempest the which was so extreme,
ed so long, that (in effect) we rested vtterly hopelesse euc
taine land: & the rather, for that through fasting & fee
wee had small vse or none at all of our fainting limme
life being a sweete thing, and hunger a sharp sauce, w
vpon whatsoeuer beast we then found aboord: & afterw
pitch from the cables, the leather from our shoes, ye
homlier matter then I may reuerently a speake of we
food for our pining carcases: but these also decayed, ye
continued, & famine increased. What might we now d
wee had none, yeat loth to famishe: labour wee coul
yet resting shoulde perishe: dye wee might not,

ning did languish: neuer were men wrapped in more misery or distressed so vnmesurably. This (alas) is grieuous ynough that you haue heard, but harder was our hap thē thus. Whilst we stoode rufully gazing one vpō another, more like to ghosts depacted than men liuing, our good Generall Menophis (a noble Duke and victorious Captaine, vnder whose fortunate conduct we had diuers times before preuailed in many a hot Encounter, being now sent of an vnhappie Embassage from India into Cycions) looking as ghost-like as any other, and supporting his weake bodie with a short Iauilin pight in the middle of the Hatches, spake to vs as followeth.

CHAP. XVIII.

¶ A speech vsed by Menophis to his dispairing Souldiers on ship-boorde, dehorting them from the feare of death, and exhorting them to the contrarie resolution.

Were it so (my euermore couragious, but now comfortlesse Companions) that we once a gaine were in the champion fields of India, enclosed with the warlike bands of Semiramis, though fiue times doubled, would I put you in hope eyther to chace them in a second pursuite, or at the least to make from them the first escape: but (alas) small is the councell ẏ I am now able to giue, yeat som what the comfort that therby you maye gaine, but no conquest at all is here to bee got: knowing that to intreat or threaten the churlish surges were more then Follie. Onely giue me leaue in this my last, I say my last and (unaccustomed exhortation) to preuaile, and then assure your selues that if this aged careas of mine (sufficiently instructed not to feare death) to bee soulde into perpetuall bondage, or to suffer death it selfe might be in ought auaileable to you, I wold account such bondage a freedome, & such death a flea-biting: for how I haue been & am affectioned towards you may wel appeare in this ẏ I a Duke

by

by birth, and your Generall by office, was notwithſtan
the firſt before the meaneſt here that did want to eate, &
laſt of this company that did feele the famine : and yeat
you eaſed of this miſerie, I ſhoulde not be impatient of
more ſorrowe. Liſten therefore, I ſay, how I (not occaſ
now, as often times heretofore, to inſtruct you how & in
manner you ought to fight) am at this time (after a far
ring ſort) to admoniſh you how and in what maner you
die. It either needes not or booteth not to bee offended
Fortune, that can be no other thē mutable by name & na
neither is Fortune (whom it pleaſeth ỹ irreligious peo
intitle a blinde Goddeſſe) anye other in deede then a by-
drawne from the Originals and Euents of our mortall
ons : but it is the vndoubted Gods thēſelues whom we
by ſome meanes vnadviſedly offended, it is they that p
and them muſt wee pacifie : as thoſe of whoſe aide we ſh
neuer diſpaire : for though perſecution procureth a deat
body, yeat a conſcience diſpairing aſſureth death to the
miſerable is diſtreſſe, more miſerable diſtruſt, but moſt
rable then to feare when we cannot hope. Neuertheleſ
vs not make our caſe ſo deſperate, but that (whatſoeue
betyde vs, life or death) we lay hold-faſt on patience, th
touch-ſtone of vertue : being pleaſure vnto paine, com
correction, wealth vnto want, and death vnto death. ba
ſhing altogether with ſuffring & not with ſtriuing, thā
is nothing more victorious, no not death it ſelfe : for wh
thoſe that death conquereth ? euen ſuch fooles as dread
vnto whom the only remembrance of death is an horror
(I ſay) as willingly become Ghoſtes whilſt they fear
graues, fearing more in ſence thē they may feele in ſubſ
& not thinking their paine wil be either not great or not
What ſhould be the cauſe that men, hauing Nature the
doubted Author, Reaſon their aſſured Inſtructor, &c
ence their continuall Perſwader, ſhould neuertheleſs d
death commeth little better than die through the onely
they conceiue of death : vnleſs doting to much on their

which they are loth to leaue, or else hoping to little of ye mer-
cifull Gods, who then forgiue an ill life when they finde a-
good end with whom it shalbe neuer too late to shake hands
as affeeming whatsoeuer is done wel enough to be done soone
ynough. Yea the rather (my loning companions) haue wee
no cause to dreade death or wish life, that are to die at the ap-
pointment of the Gods, and not by the iudgment of men: for
to the Person worthyly condemned death is a double death,
it being far more miserable to deserue it than to suffer it: and
yeat though it be in the power of men to iudge men, Nature
doth assure death vnto all, not granting vnto any one his life
by patient but at pleasure: and that in such sort, that not the
wysest man lyuing can say, theare, then, or thus I shall dye,
and yeat sure he is that die he shall. Seeing therefore (my
good frinds) that death is so certaine as nothing more sure, &
the order of his comming so vnsure as nothing lesse certaine,
and that an honest death is the goale of our liues, how happie
are we (if we could conceiue of our happinesse) that shall dye
with such fauourable opportunitie of repentaunce & well de-
seruing of our countrie, lamented for of our friends, & laugh-
ed at of our foes, yea then when life is yrke some vnto vs, and
that not on Jeobets, as do Malefactors: not in Prisons, as
doe Captiues: not in Corners, as do Cowards: not in Quar-
rels, as doe Cutters: not in Chaines, in our [illegible] Tri-
umphes: neither yeat suddenly, than which no death is more
dreadfull: but in a ship, which doth argue vs venterous: in
the Seas, not to be subdued by Conquerours: in our Prince
his affaires, as loyall subiects: with famine, which confoun-
deth Monsters: with fame of former prowesse: and in praier,
which shall reuiue vs. What can we wish more of the gods,
or what shoulde I saye more vnto you, whose deliuerie is not
desperate but euen vnto sence vnpossible, and vnto whom (for-
lorne Soules) death, the ende of all wretchednesse ought spe-
cially to be welcome? Certes, no more remaineth but to in-
treate you (whom henceforth I neuer shall more exhort) to be
patient without grudging, penitent without wauering, prepa-

red without dispayring, dying to the flesh, and lyuing to your soules: yea lastly remember, I beseech you, that wee are no sooner borne into the worlde but that wee liue to die from the world, and therefore ought rather to loue whether wee must necessarily than from whence wee must of necessitie. Thus not able to comfort you as I would, but willingly to counsel you as I may, no more resteth but that I wishe the continuance of so grieuous a life, to haue deliueraunce by a goodly death.

This said, that noble Duke turneth his face, & we might perceiue howe the teares trilled downe his cheekes: at sight whereof we that did always reuerence him for his Grauitie, obay him for his Authoritie, loue him for his Lenity, & honour him for his Liberalitie, could not but for companie weepe.

CHAP. XIX.

¶ The Pylots prosecution of the sea-distressing storie, howe him selfe, contrarie to all hope, escaped: And of Atys & Abynados their returne from the Scythians castell.

Immediatlie as he had deliuered such his exhortatiō, one of our weake fellow-souldiers suddēly fainteth, falleth down and d[illegible]t loe (an horrible thinge, yeat considering that hunger breaketh stone-walles, and necessitie suffreth no restraint, at that time to be tollerated in vs) no sooner was the breath out of the miserable man his bodie but that stripping him out of his cloathes, like famished doggs euerie of vs rent some one peece of his starued carrās whereupon we fed as of such delicate fare that no gold might haue bought the smalest portion thereof: and so pleasant seemed this vnnatural refection, that euerie of vs did now (as crowes the carren) watch the like opportunitie in our fellowes: growing in the end generally to this conclusion, that ech day lots should be cast, & he vpon whom it so lighted should suffer such gentle death as him selfe would, if not as we should deuise, and his bodie to

be

be equally deuided amongst the Suruiuors to be eaten. Diuerse dayes were past, & diuerse matyred soules had performed this hard Composition: in the end the lot fell to mee, so that die I should, and (in good sooth) die I would, neither did any of vs al desire to haue liued: being perswaded either to perish and that shortly in the drenching waues, or by this casuall crueltie, or else in the ende by famine and (which was not the least of our griefes) who coulde willingly abide to see the butchered bodies of their deare friends, whilst ẏ flesh yet pãted, to be mangled into small gobbits & dealt about the bloodie ship for the others to feede vpon? So that therefore with greater patience then I now liue I thẽ prepared to die, mine hungry Companiõs in the meane while as eagerly whetting their teeth on their stomacks. Being almost at point to haue giuẽ my watch-word to him that standing at my back should haue smitten off mine head, euen at that very instant a mighty Billow mounting vp into the ship had almost ouercouered ẏ hatches with water, so that the whole companie (the ship being now in great danger) were faine to leaue mee at my prayers, & I also to leaue praying, & al at once to fal to their businesse. In which meane time a Lad of mine, and as louing a boy as might serue any man, perceiuing ẏ storme some-what to decrease and the thicke cloudes beginning to breake, had of his own accord climed the Mast, from whẽce, or euer breathing time serued again to haue falne in hãd with me (the finishing of whose life they purposed to haue made their next work) ẏ boy suddenly crieth Land, land, reioyse my hares I discrye Land: hearing such news it was needelesse to bid vs reioise, in my purse I had a round summe which I gaue ẏ boy for his tidings, & ech of vs rewarded him bountifully. By this time were the Seas iolyly calme, & the skies perfitly cleare, wherfore (as it stood vs vpon) taking time whilest time serued, & as well as we might supplying our brokẽ tacklings we tare the shirts from of our backs to patch vp our ragged sailes, & clapping on as many as our ship might beare, a merry wind (contrarye to all hope) did shortlye bringe vs a shoare

though not in the ſame place where wee ſhould haue arriued, yeat in ſuch a place whereas wee were comfortably relieued. Thus you may ſee (qd. the Pylot) that land, Seas, and our ſelues are ſubiect to one and the ſame God, and not to Chaunce.

The three ſorrowfull watchmen, ſorrowfull I ſay becauſe not a little grieued at the abſence of the two brethren, hauing with this and ſuch like talke driuen out the night, when the morning Starre had a prettie while appeared brake vp their watch and anon Arys and Abynados hallowe from the ſhoare, who being made out vnto with the Boate were merily receiued aboorde: Where report of new matters was diuerſly handled as enſueth.

Pheone

Pheone.

CHAP. XX.

¶ The Pylot reporteth the occaſion of thafforeſayde diſaſtrous voyage of Menophis: & of the loue betwixt Staurobates and Pheone.

Columnus quartus.

HAuing thus brought Atys, and Abynados from the Caſtle to the Shippe, being brauelye vnder ſayle, well furthered with a ſmooth daungerleſſe Sea, and a gentle whiſſling winde when the twoo brethren had retounted all they had ſeene, and the three watchmen the effect of that they had ſayen Belopares did then chalenge the Pylot of his laſt nights promiſe, which was to declare the then propertie and purpoſed imployment of thoſe riches in that vnluckie voyage (as before remembred) caſt ouer-boorde.

In deede (anſwered the Pylot) I allowe ſuch a matter, and am readie to acquite mee of that promiſe, and now you ſhall haue it as my ſelfe did receiue it aſwell from the eye as the eare, and thus it was.

In the beginning of King Selchim his raigne chaunced greate warres betweene him and the Indians, but in the ende Selchim preuailling receiued in hoſtage Staurobates the King of India his onely ſonne: this luſtie young Prince hauing his abode in the Court of Cyciona became intirelye enamoured on Pheone, a gallante and beautifull Ladie ſiſter to King Selchim who alſo with equall loue ſuffered her li-

[redacted]

bertie to his liking. When this ſweete paſſion long tyme had mutually increaſed betwixt them, and that it was certified to Staurobates that his Father was dead, and that the Indians attended his comming & Coronation, Staurobates did both eaſilye obtaine a returne into his countrie, and withall King Selchim his glad conſent to match with Pheone. But the yong Louers not eſteeming it ſufficient ſolemnly to haue plighted their faithes ech to other, did alſo ſecretly bind vp ỹ bargain with a nights lodging either of both thẽ ſeuerally receiuing & deliuering 2. ſuch Paunes as neither of both might afterwards poſſibly redeme. Now whẽ loue had cauſed Staurobates long to linger in Cyciona, and that his vrgẽt affaires called him faſt away, he ſorrowfully taking his leaue of Pheone departed with this promiſe, that before a certaine time ſoone after following were expired hee would ſend ſhippes to waſte her into India vowing that nothing except death ſhold hinder that his reſolution, no nor death it ſelfe but that by the time prefixed newes of ſuch hinderance ſhould be returned: & ſo taking her a Jewell from off his finger, and whiſpering certaine wordes in her eare he tooke ſhip, the one gazing towardes the ſhoare, and the other after the ſayles, ſo long as ſhoare or ſayles might be diſcried.

Staurobates at his home comming, found his countrie inuaded by that armipotent Virago Semiramis, whom (which neuer hapned her elſe-where) hee incountred, wounded, and laſtly chaſed her mightie troupes from out his Territories wholy deliuering himſelfe in a ſhort time of the Aſſirians.

Scarcely was the armour colde from of his backe and the Scepter warme in his hand, but that (remembring his promiſe) he diſpatched the before named Duke Menophis to Cicyona, from thence to ſafe-conduct his betrothed Lady: ſending by him great ſtore of treaſure, part thereof preſents for King Selchim, part giftes for diuerſe of his Nobilitie, and the reſidue for the honorable furniſhing of Pheone.

But by that time that the warres at home were appeaſed & (as you haue heard) our daungerous ſayling anoyded, & al

&c

ter so long famishment & bad dyet our selues weare in health and strength recouered, the time before appointed on was expired, and yeat of all this while Pheone heard no tidings frō Staurobates: wherefore supposing that he had been vnmindfull of his promise, or at the least purposed to giue her the slip, it is sayd she fell into these Exclamations.

CHAP. XXI.

¶ Howe Pheone, causelesse suspitious of Staurobates his loyaltie, exclaymeth of the credulitie of her Sexe, and the inconstancie of men: And how she lastly resolueth.

AND is there no remedie (vnfortunate, foolish, and forsaken wench) but that thou must answere so dere an interest for the cheape loue of his so momētarie loue? must it follow of necessitie because thou wert credulent that he therfore must be inconstant? is such the euent of his lamentable looks, smooth wordes, and often othes? ah Staurobates, Staurobates, who woulde haue thought so youthfull a Leacher coulde haue counterfaited so artificiall a Louer? but I perceiue (too late I perceiue) that men make not their false harts priuie to that which their faire tongues seeme rufully to plead: & therfore Nature hath left our weake sexe in a most wretched condition, suffring vs ouer-feruently to loue, & giuing it to men euen kindly to chaung, making vs as wiers for their wresting, ware for their working, and fooles for their flouting. Howbeit before thy obtaine, then we, who but we, and onlye wee are Idols worthy their sacrifices? they ply vs with pityfull epistles, they prouoke vs with premeditated eloquence, they attire thē by ye boke, & speake not but in print: what haue we they prayse not? nay, what lacke we praise-worthy they faine not? why our gloues, yea our slippers, nay the very earth whereupon wee then treade hath (saye they) vertue, or else (knowe wee) they flatter: a simple kisse on our hands is thē restoritiue to their harts: but (good gods) for a louers fee at

our

our lips, they daunce in the Aire, they cast downe their C
lets, they couch their Speares, they spur their Steeds
enter the Lists, yea we rather want wherein to implo
labours, than they in what to please their Ladies.
(Dissemblers that they are) bee it so that they preuail
whether they loue still, as do a few, a little as do many,
at all as doe most, what other reckoning can we Cast
make but that the first of their recouery is the last date
libertie: ẏ the ielous eies of the hote louer shalbe ouer
dãt, & the emperious mind of the luke-warme aske too
attendance, & the thirde sort (hauing deceaued) shall le
to our Cares, as Rauens hauing disclosed doe their yo
the Aire: sauing that Rauens after a while returne a
ked by loue, where these would neuer retaine vs at all
resisted by law. Thus play they Fores, and wee pro
tered: the Scorpions, and we stinged: they Diuels,
tempted: but who worser than thou Staurobates? a
wert thou present (changing Churle) I know thou co
ledge no cause of such straungnesse, nor I for anye c
mine (except for trusting thee too much) be iustly cha
as for my beautie, had it been sometimes baser my
had been at this time far better. Ah Pheone, desolat
ne, how mayst thou wind thy selfe out of these euils,
redresse for such iniuries? complaine to thy brother? w
mit by warre hee enforce Staurobates to wedd thee:
warre can enforce Staurobates to loue thee, a
much better martired then so maried: and shouldest
solue (which thine ouer-much follie will not suffer) t
his disloialtie as an acquittance of all loue, yeat so
hee in thine heart, that for his losse thou couldest not
guish: and more than so (and too much by so much)
should Father the fruit of thy growing wombe (th
all thy miseries) but only Staurobates, whom thou (
ton ouer credulent of vowes) didst entertaine simpl
husband, but not, as the heauens can witnesse, willi
an Adulterer? how beit through such foolishnesse my

shamed; mine Honour stained, and my death in law desarped. What doth it (alas) aduantage me now that my death, beautie, education, and entertainement haue heretofore allured mightie Kinges and worthy personages Enters? that must nowe liue obscurely (the Gods wot where and howe poorely) the most wretched Relict of so notorious a Dissembler, or else die a shamefull death for my violated chastitie. O, well had I been if happily interred, or at least wise by so infamous an Epitaph not suruiued. But what beate I the ayre with successlesse wordes? Why doe I not rather conuay my selfe into India? where (perhaps) when I shall manyfest vnto Staurobates the distresse wherein I am here left, when I shall humbly prostrate my selfe at his feete whome I neuer wittingly offended, when he shall behold the teares continually gushing from out those eyes which once he loued, whē my tongue shall discourse a lamentable tale, and my sorrowfull gestures affirme the same to be credible, when I shall charge him with his promises and dowes, and lastly, when I shall disclose (my follie, but his fault) my great bestie, Then (which I shall account amends for all wronges) Loue, Pittie, Feare, or Shame shall againe wyn for whom I now wish. But (foole) wilt thou herein also be wray thine error? doth not hee nowe disdaine of thee that art his equall? and shall he not then as a Ruuagate forbid thee his presence, as frantike commaunde thee to scilence, as offensiue enioyne thee punishment, or as cōbersome adiudge thee death? O succourlesse estate of mine, O vnkinde Staurobates, ah vnhalowed Pheone.

With such like passions as these, being tormented with ielosie, though in deede not threatned anye such ieopardie, did Pheone a while driue forth the time: vntill in the end, not able any longer to hide that swelling sicknesse which she knew to be other than a Tympany, one morning betimes she secretly conuaieth her self from out the Court in disguised apparel, not to be recouered by any search, or heard of by any inquiry.

After which her departure, within lesse than a seuen-night, Duke Menophis and we ariue at Cyciona: but intelligence

being theare had of this euill newes, making short tariance theare, we resaile (with sorrow ynough) to India, and certifie to Staurobates our euill aduentures on the seas, with the heauie tidings of Pheone her missing.

Staurobates, who had pitifully heard the report of our mishaps, & tooke most patiently the losse of his so great treasure hearing nowe such newes of her whom hee loued as his owne life, fetching pitifull sighes, and eft-soones falling into perilous sowues, could hardly be reuiued, wanting little but that hee had presently died: and long after, remained at point vtterly to haue for-sworne wiuing, by reason that Fortune had euen then annihilated his Commencing, when, hauing alreadie his Grace, he accounted himselfe a Graduate.

CHAP. XXII.

¶ King Staurobates hearing no tydings of Pheone, became enamored on Marpissa her Neece. Marpissa, not affecting his loue, is enamored of one Crisippus.

But what is it that time doth not determine, or at least wise diminish? diuers yeares after (hee yet continuing a broken Batcheler) when his pensiuenes was growen from a wound to a skarre, hee ariued at Cicyona, there familiarlye to visite his olde friende, and brother in lawe that might haue been King Selchim, who gladlye gaue him entertainement aunsmerable to his magnificence.

During the time of Staurobates his now abode in Cicyona, Marpissa King Selchim his onlye Daughter and heire, perfected by Nature, and pullished by Nurture, and one whom Enuie it selfe coulde not in anye wise impeach, occupied so great a portion of nowe more hers than his owne heart, that Pheone was then diszeased but Marpissa thereof seezed, the Aunt dismissed, but the Neece admitted, the one lacked, but the other loued. Staurobates therefore, first mouing Selchim of this match, and there preuailing, did secondly make loue

to

to Marpiſſa, but there ſayleth howbeit, like a lolly wench ſhe ſtarly ſmoothed him all with ſuch vilanyte anſwers, that cunningly ſhee leaueth her ſelfe at libertie, and giueth to him nevertheleſſe cauſe to play on the bridle, for he aſſured himſelfe of nothing more than that he had gotten a wife, when ſhe perſwaded her ſelfe of nothing leſſe thã to take him for husband.

There was at that time in the Court, attendaunt vppon a young Duke (which Duke had been, in vaine, a long ſuter to the Princeſſe) one Criſippus, knowne to bee no other than a rich Marchants ſon of the ſame Citie where the Court then lay, but yeat a youthfull Gallant and a braue Courtier: he at the commaundement and in the behalfe of the Duke his Maiſter, vſed often repaire to Marpiſſa, and had much conference with her as touching the ſame his Lords loue. But ſhe reiecting the courteous proffers of the maiſter, vnto contemplatiuely reſpect the comly perſonage of ỹ ſeruãt, who being ſcarcely xx. winters old, both for actiuitie, maners, & well making, was (at the leaſt wiſe in her eye) not ſecõd to any. This Criſippus I ſay this affamed factor, & fauoured Solicitor, was the only ſlerping Endimion ſecretly hilled of Phœbe, & (ſo far forth as her loue wanting a ſecond ſonne might extend it ſelfe) to Galatea an Acis, to Venus an Adonis, & to Marpiſſa the firſt of her loue, or the leaſt of her life. Wherefore after that ſhe had with earneſt & long endeuour ſought to reſiſt vnreſiſtable loue, at the length taking courage boldely to reſiſt, ſhe entreth with her ſelfe into theſe Arguments: What reaſon hath thou (Marpiſſa) to contend with loue that is both reaſonable and vnreaſonable, adding fo to fire fuell? or what ſtumpeſt thou vpon theſe ouer-curious points, thy fathers diſpleaſure, Criſippus his Pedigree, or thing owne inabilitie? when the firſt may be pacified, or elſe by meanes auoyded: for frõ whom we are deriued by birth to thẽ what cõmoditie ſo euer than vnaccurate minds? but to whom we are ioyned by loue frõ thẽ what may we leſſe withholde thã our owne perſons? yea Marpiſſa thou muſt alſo reuerence as a daughter & loue as a wife, and yeat the later not preiudiciall to the former as concerning Criſippus his Pedigree or Pourtie, what is

that to bee reſpected? ſeeing thou doeſt delight in his perſonage, not deſcant of his parentage, whoſe vertue doth counteruaile the want of Nobilitie: for better the man lacking wealth, than wealth lacking the man. Thirdly, what ſhouldſt thou be more wiſe then wiſe? that are therefore to be pardoned becauſe in loue, and who is ignorant that loue reſpecteth no perſons? for howſoeuer in all other things happeneth a ſuperroguie, yeat Nature that hath giuen vs all one Byrth, one Breath, and one Death, in this one only thing remaineth vncorrupt, and is to all alike indifferent, making Phabus a Sheapheard, and Hercules a Cot-queane? but admit the diſcord, yeat marriage maketh the Concord.

Marriage (qd. I) yea but all the craft in catching, & cunning in keeping: I marie, Marpiſſa, this was ſweetely ſpoken if faire wordes might win him, but Criſippus is no pigeon to bee taken with a beane, nor a child to bee intiſed with a Ball, he may be perhaps a Louer, but not loue for loſſe, and will more eſteeme a dowrie that is bountifull, than a Kings Daughter though beautifull. Alas, Marpiſſa, what dowrie canſt thou bring him? Ah, Death, if he be taken Baniſhment, if he eſcape and pouertie, howſoeuer hee ſpeedeth: Wherefore if thou wilt loue him, then leaue to loue him, but that (alas) will neuer be, except thou alſo leaue to liue. Nay, rather moaue the queſtion, and afterwardes diſpoſe of thy ſelfe according to his anſwere: they are more than miſerable that ſeeke a ſword to periſhe on the point, before a ſalue to applie to their paine: the vexed perſon that in moſt anguiſh crieth out to bee deliuered of griefe, the ſame woulde not with the leaſt violence bethen diſpatched of life: ſpeake Marpiſſa now or elſe neuer ſpeede, ſue to him for loue that perhaps woulde but feares to attempt therein the like: thou ſhalt no doubt obtaine: hee is neyther diſcurteous, nor timerous, and ſo conſtant a Partner ſhall the rather make him venterous of the perill.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIII.

¶ Marpiſſa taketh occaſion to diſcloſe to Criſippus her affection towards him.

LVcius is fabula, laboring yet in theſe paſſions, the perceyued Criſippus daunting attendance about the purſuite of the Duke his loue: whom (more for that ſhee had nede a new plea of her owne to plie, than vpon any will to heare the olde pleaded cauſe of his maiſter, the which ſhee had alreadie both in thought & by word diſmiſſed) ſhe calleth into a withdrawing chamber, where giuing him intertainement more then vſuall, but neat no more than ſtoode with modeſtie, they enter into this Dialogue.

Mar. WHat newes, Criſippus? your Lord and Maiſter is (I hope) ſatisfied, not offended, with the returne of my late anſwere: if then you tother Repaire bee not his Replie but your owne preferment, giue mee leaue to intrude my ſelfe a dealer in your demaunde, & doubt not of my diligence to whomſoeuer and for whatſoeuer in your behalfe.

Cr. Neither is it poſſible, Madame, my Lord ſhould be ſatisfied, being ſo vnfortunate in your loue, or your Ladyſhippe offenſiue to him that only to you hath vowed all partie: as for my tother Repaire, it is humbly (as before) to proſecute his ſuite vnto whom you my preſently eſteeme the verie ſubſtance of ſorrow: and laſtly, for the receipt of ſuch your ſo gracious offers, vnworthie Criſippus ſayeth himſelfe diſabled to meaſure part of that thank vnleſſe to your Ladyſhips eares, which without all meaſure is contained in his heart.

Mar. Fewe thanks may ſerue where benefits are ſo ſmall: but, Criſippus, as it would not hurt me to be more amiable, ſo would it help the Duke to be leſſe amorous.

Cr. As touching your Ladyſhip I anſwere, that to a Perfection a Supplie were needeleſſe, but as to my Lord I ſay, that perſwaſion or diſſwaſion were bootleſſe: for ſo far off is

hee from being cleare of that which to all louers is commoll; that then hee forceth most for you when hee heareth himselfe least fauoured of you: and yeat to couple vp the losse would, sayth he, argue an idle Huntesman.

Mar. But to be still at losse is tedious hunting.

Cr. Yeat hope of finding rebateth from such tediousnesse.

Mar. You speake in clowdes, Crisippus, howe meane you that finding?

Cr. As doth my Father finde my Mother, sometimes at boorde, sometimes in bed.

Mar. A briefe construction, but all the better for Staurobates thinking to find me so.

Cr. And this a bad comfort, and all the worser for my Lord threatned to loose you so.

Mar. Well, Suersbye well, I perceaue were the case yours, you that are for an other so earnest, would be for your selfe importunate.

Cr. What I coulde bee (Madame) that resteth, but what I should be that is euident, wiser (me thinks) than to run on so fleeuelesse an errand, or prosecute so bootelesse an action.

Mar. Yeat euen now you talked of an idle Hunter.

Cr. So did you La. of tedious hunting: and then did I argue for my Lord as a Louer, but now doe I answere your Ladyship as Crisippus.

Mar. But in the Ebbe not to watch the Tyde is to loose the Tyde through negligence.

Cr. But in the Ebbe, say I, such a watchman may sweale with heate, starue with cold, or tyre with tariance: onely he watcheth well that findeth the Tyde fit for his passage.

Mar. If to trie the constancie of men we linger a while, is it not (thinke you) good pollicie?

Cr. Yes, if in that while to kill men with languor you account it no bad victorie.

Mar. But should women consent lightly, their louers would conceaue ouer lewdly.

Cr. But because they are Louers, therefore ignoraunt

that

that coy wenches are, for the most parte, cunning wantons.

Mar. As who would say, when men be wilfull in loue, women must then be witlesse in choise.

Cr. Wilfull fooles in-deede are fayre gamsters, pittyfull Soldiers, and faithfull Louers, and (vnder your Ladyshipps correction bee it spoken) so wise in their choyse oftentimes are women, that whilst they desire to be woed and disdaine to bee wone, it fareth with them as with Hobbies, that turning taile to the Larke make winge to the Dorre.

Mar. And what of it, Crisippus seeing to effect what we effect suffiseth, as swete a morsell ywis to Iuno (had their loue been allowable) was Ixon as Iupiter, and to Ioue Io as Iuno, and the reason is, loue feeleth no lacke: howbeit such doings make not to vs for documentes? you speake of disdayne but where I pray you were constancie to any, should wee bee alike curteous to all? and yeat forsooth if we remoue any for comlynesse we anon are rebuked for coynes: when (credit me Crisippus) in loue diuerse thinges maye diuersly hinder, amongst which not alwayes Obstinacie, but sometimes and chiefly want of Opportunitie: my selfe, for example, may & perhaps doe beare an especiall liking to some one man, but looke not (thinke you) my parents and friendes to lyke or mislike of the match? yes, Crisippus, put case your selfe might win me without their Consent, yeat I gesse it woulde greene you so daungerously to conclude.

Cr. Bee this coynes, or bee it comlynes, sure I am that loue it is not: for loue straineth curtesse with frendes & parentes, shaketh handes with wealth and pleasures, yea it biddeth life and all farewell, loue (if loue it be in deede) is of such efficacie.

Mar. Tush, Crisippus, you nowe talke of Apollo his laughter.

Cr. And why not, Madame, of Apollo his loue? hee with infinite others haue done the like, my selfe, were I a louer, would doe no lesse: but what better president then that of

my

my Lorde, who presently is at a point to performe fullye as much: or might any thing be more than losse of breath, readie also for your loue to fulfill that more. It therefore (not offending good manners) I might gesse in iest at what I wish in earnest, I would leuell at my Lord to hit your Louer, that one especiall man I meane standing (as is partlye confessed) so highly in your Ladyships fauour: because that he no man hath better deserued the good happe of so gracious a Lot as is the prize of your Loue.

When Marpissa had thus priuily felt Crisippus his pulses, although not beating so amorously as shee did wish, yeat bringing opportunitie to vtter what shee woulde, not omitting therefore so good an occasion she sayth.

I cannot tell (Crisippus) whether I maye thinke you Cauilous in threatning kindnesse where none is, credulent, in beleeuing what at no time was, or constant in pursuing what shall neuer be: but me-thinkes your labours alreadie lost in the Duke his behalfe, might long since haue disswaded both him and you from groping after a Shadowe, as much more nowe, Staurobates being a Competitor, from gaping after a Substance: neuerthelesse not tyred with a deade effect you harpe still to a deaffe hope. That I may therfore remoue such errors, besides that my Father no longer agoe then yeasterdaye last promised mee in marriage to Staurobates (whithe Banes also I meane to forbyd) and I assure you I haue been am, and meane to bee so farre off from matching with the Duke, that hence-foorth I protest neuer more to talke with him, or with anye other soliciting his loue: wherefore (good Crisippus) cease to counsell him or to intreate me any further herein, and let him also susser himselfe to digest this a final aunswere. But because (ah scilence I knowe woulde be more seemelye) I am vrged by loue violentlye, by your demaunde willingly, and by posting occasion of necessitie to direct you as it were by the hande to my heart, I will not in daunger be daintie but reueale to you the man faide to haue subdued my libertie. What shoulde I say more? naye what

might I with modeſtie leſſe ſay, or at the leaſt ſuffer you to ayme before I name, then that ſhere teares drowning her wordes gaue a ſhort pauſe to this (that followeth) thy ſelfe, my dere Criſippus, art y one whō I long time haue loued, do loue, & will loue. Now if this thing ſeemeth ābiguous for likelihood, ſtrange for loue, then for further triall commaunde mee, yea preſently commaund me (for that the ſhortnes of the time promiſing an euer-ſpeedy marryage betwixt Staurobates & mee can ſuffer no long delay) to diſrobe my ſelfe of this rich attire, and ſo, diſguiſed, to follow thee wherſoeuer my Conductor. Doubt not, but y making an eaſie eſcape from hence we may liue as contentedly elſe-where, & being lawfull wedded (for that is the bounds of my loue) mutually haue fruition of loues delight, and that not in want, I being prouided of Iewels, a light cariage, worth abundance of wealth, neither may they want that faithfully loue much is it that I leaue, but much would I loſe onely to win thee to my ſelfe: for, Criſippus, from the firſt day that I viewed (God graunt I may ſay lucky viewed) thy perſon, I wholy haue ſetled my ſelfe onelye thine owne: wherefore neither ſcorne nor feare to enioy what only is thine, or at the leaſt-wiſe let her preſently vnderſtand thy pleaſure, whoſe good or hadde dates wholy conſiſt on thy good or bad anſwere.

The teares thus ſtopping her wordes, ſhee wringeth his handes amorously betwixt hers, & hauing dried her eyes thus proceedeth, If happily, Criſippus, you find ought of immodeſty eſcaping my tongue, impute the ſame to y integritie of loue, that neceſſitie of ſpeedy diſpatch, the anſwere of your owne queſtion, and to your owne late ſpeech againſt coyneſſe. So Maidenlye bashfulneſſe hardlye reſtraining a coniunction of lippes, ſhee endeth to ſpeake, and beginneth againe to weepe.

CHAP. XXIIII.

¶ Of Criſippus his timerous anſwere, to Marpiſſas kind offer.

CRiſippus albeit he did palpably behoulde, feele and heare this angelic all Temptatriſſe, and her ſweete Incantations, yeat ſtoode he ſtill like an heedles ſlie, marueilouſlye amaſed, & hardly perſwading himſelfe, but that he had ſeene ſome viſion, or in a dreame had heard that melodious harmonie: vntill feeling perfectlie, that he did wake and not ſleepe, that he looked on her with open eies, that had thus louingly laide open to him her harte, becauſe he had neuer yet marched after loues Onſet, a beautifull blushing made him ſeeme more louelie, but his ignorance in loue to aunſweare thus abſurdely.

When Serpents (qd. he) but hiſſe, then no man ſo fooliſh as to truſt them, but vntill women ſting few men ſo wiſe as to miſtruſt them: your grace (I knowe) expecteth an aunſwere, & I feare more to offend rudely, than that your Ladyſhippe will pardon readily. Is it poſſible that you ſoe beautifull a Lady, the onely daughter and heyre of a Kinge, forſaking thoſe perſonages whom for their worthineſſe in euery reſpect you might well faut aſſe, ſhould forſake them & your libertie, & betake you to me that am (as you knowe) no more, if ſoe much than a poore gentleman, ꝑ ſon of a Marchante, whoſe wealth in his Store-houſes is more then his Gentrie with the Heralds, and my countenance (ſuch as it is) in the Courte, more than the coyne he can leaue me in hys Coffers, with whom you cannot liue but in exile & danger, is it poſſible, I ſay, you ſhould ſoe much embrace your ſelfe as to embrace ſo homely an huſband as is Criſippus? no Madam, no, Criſippus feareth he ſhoulde clyme too highe, yf Marpiſſa ſhoulde fall ſo low, or perhaps hath learned by others loſſe that a pleaſãt foe doth eaſily ſupplant. Yeat pardon me Madam, I will not iudge but that your Ladyſhippe may intend ꝑ ſame loue you ꝓtend, which admitted, what elſe followeth, but that you ꝓſſing ſo cheape your loue ſhold be ouergreate a looſer, and I buying ſoe dangerous a bargaine be a ſorowful gayner, for Kinges haue eies that pierce into euery Crannie, eares that heare in euery company, and

handes

handes that stretch into euery Countrye, in whose affaires but onely to ayme is litle better than to holde the Wolfe by the eares, or to walke vppon right narrow Bridges ouer most deepe Foordes. Seing therefore that such loue would be soe much losse to you, such daunger to me, and so preiudiciall to vs both, let it suffice that I humble euen the knees of mine heart to acknowledge your so rare bountie, & vouchsafe the same to impetrate pardon for denial of so vnprofitable proceedinges.

When Marpissa heard hym make this vnkinde conclusion (a bitter Acceptance thought shee of so bountifull an Offer) only replying with cutting sighes, and shaking her mistempered head, as who should say, ah desolate wench I and hard-harted wretch thou, she sorowfully departed to her lodging, whether by the teares trickling from downe her eyes she might haue beene tracted, leauing Crisippus all alone in the same place where they had thus talked of this euill hanselled loue: who seeing her thus suddenly gone returned thē to the duke his lodging, certifying to him the euill successe of his sute with Marpissa.

Well qd. the Duke (setting a good face on a bad matter) what remedie but perforced patience? they that may not loue where they whuld, must leaue when they may: and for ought I see the losse would be lighte were the fondnes of mine affection lesse, for it is commonly seene, that praying Haggardes & peeuish women as they are caught when they woulde not so they checke when they shoulde not: Thus did he smooth brag & smite beautie, when his thought might wil haue controlled his tongue, bidding Crisippus farewel, whō loue did thus welcome to his lodging.

CHAP. XXV.

¶ Crisippus becommeth passionatelye amorous, he wryteth to Marpissa: how they conclude, and of their calamitie that succeeded.

HIs Pedātie (ẏ weather being moiste) brought dry slippers to put on his feete, the Maister (his witts being on

wol-gathering) hauing more neede of warme carchiefes to binde on his head: the which was now become a hiue of bussing Bees, not standing, as he thought, on his shoulders, but hanging by Geometrie: hee knoweth not, sweete yongling, what loue meaneth, and yeat he loueth, he would not loue, & yeat could not but loue, yea & that so feruentlye, that hauing acquainted himselfe but a small time with the Copesmate of loue, Solytarines, he might haue been vsed in a Consistorie of louers in place of an Anothomie: being so much the more wretched, by how much him selfe was the Author of his own wretchednes, in forslowing goulden Opportunitie the smyling handmaide of Fortune.

But as loue did triumphe ouer Crisippus, so the same furie did tyrannise ouer Marpissa, whoe (a tollerable fault in that sexe) liued with as small filicitie, as she loued vnfortunatly: but not yeat vtterly hopelesse of better successe, she thought it labour not altogether lost to finishe that replie in written tables at their last departure begone only by pityfull gestures: the which purporting many louing argumentes enterlaced also with some desperate conclusions were by her messenger deliuered to his perusing.

When Crisippus had (with ioy enough) viewed & reuiewed those plausable lines, he by the same messenger thus reanswered in writing her letters.

SO often doe I accuse my selfe of cowardise (moste worthy Lady) as the hardines of the sillie Snaile meeteth my remembrance, whose courage is such that the bouldt worme is seene venterouslye to clime to the topps of the most loftiest Towers, when (to saye troth) I through Timeritie, haue baulked the profered bounty of you a Lady than whom liueth not any more louelye, in excuse whereof I infer the cause not to be any mislike of the matter, but a mistrust of the manner, no defect of willingnes, but my too too vnworthynes, no light acceptance of your so rare beautie, but the vnlikelyhood of so strang bounty: wherefore seing that feare only hath been my fault, I hope your curteous nature (sweete Lady) make a fa-

nourable construction of my childish errour: for the which I haue alredy performed such extreme pennance that had I not conceiued hope of life by your writing to day, death no doubt had taken away both hope and life before to morrow. For my passed simplicitie I aske pardon, and of my following fidelitie I craue triall, forgiue the one, & affie in the other: to whatsoeuer affaires you shall imploy my seruice, to that only office shall I applie all duety: and what you henceforth account but an errour, that same shall I conclude an heresie: only liue (Marpissa) to continue your loue, or Crisippus dieth to end his languor.

Your Graces more willing than worthy,
Crisippus.

From this day forwards they enioyed the benefit of many amorous meetings, and in conclusion of their vnsuspected familiaritie proceeded a secret marriage.

Anon after the time drew fast on wherin a marriage should haue been consumated betwixt Marpissa and King Staurobates: but shee and Crisippus, rather carelesse of their liues then inconstant in their loues, fled together from the Court, more priuely than prouidently as hapned: for longe were they not absent but by and by missed, the Portes, Hauens, and whole Countrey being narrowlye layde for their apprehention: so that not able to flee far that were pursued so fast, they might not be more couertly hid then they were curiously sought and in the end founde out.

When the two Louers were brought into the presence of the two Kinges, Staurobates (sweating in a newe chaffe, as cast in his second accompt) sendeth as fierce lookes at Crisippus that had so forstalled his mariage, as did Selchim a sterne countenaunce at Marpissa that had thus disobeyed his meaning, who adding these following speeches proceeded also to a terrible sentence

CHAP. XXVI.

¶ King Selchim his ſpeach, and cruell ſentence pronounced againſt his Daughter and Criſippus.

VVHy ſuffer I the preſence of ther ſo diſhonеſt a childe by whoſe practiſe I am become ſo diſhonoured a father? why haue I bene ſo carefull of thy welfare that art ſoe careles of thine owne preferment? were it not (thou impudente Strumpet) that I rather ſhunne to be noted of impacience in giuing the bridle to my iuſt anger, than doubt to bee charged of iniuſtice in punniſhing ſo vniuſt a Treſpaſſer, this hart of mine could readily conſent to beholde that thy carcaſſe by mine onely deed beweltered in bloud dead, & trampled vpon with my feete: but liue I ſay, liue yet a while that haſt already liued ouerlong to me & no leſſe vnluckily to thyne owne ſelfe, that I am offended & thou the offender thou ſhalt anon feele, if (contrary to kinde) the deuouring wilde beaſtes in ỹ deſerts ſhall not ſhewe vnto thee more curteſie then I iuſtlye occaſioned, pretend pittie. Beleue me, thy light lookes haue made me before now ſuſpicious of thy looſe life, as alwaies more fearefull to preuent the daunger that might proceed of thy wanton geſtures, then carefull to recouer thee of any thy ſicknеſſes, eſteeming it leſſe difficile to incounter mine open enemies in battel, than eaſie to countermaund the ſecret Aſſailants of thy beauty. This feare is incidẽt to carefull fathers that are ſped of ſuch amorous daughters, for whom (and that or euer they are iudged marriageable) beſides dowries more then eaſily diſburſed, thankefully accepted, or profitably employed, muſt alſo be prouided huſbands, leaſt they impatiẽt of tarriaunce procure vnto themſelues Paramours: yea rather than ſuch haſte ſhould be hindred by nõ-ſufficiẽcie, the louing Pigeons will firſt or grow in their Shoes, or walke on their Toes, or add to their yeares, or ſubtract from Childiſhnes, or if yet diſabled, ſuffer perhaps a large trial before a long ſuſpi-

cion

cion: better knowing to entertaine a louer at xiii. then to obay a Father at xxx. Let vs proffer a conuenient matche the simpring saintes will then (on gods name) liue still maydens or haue chaunge of excuses not to mary, whē anon after thēselues fantasing or flattered of some Jacke, or vnthrift (bag they first, or beg they after) they must (in ẏ diuels name) marrie or not liue patiētly Maidens: thus their first & chiefe study is husbandes, & their last, & least care obedience & huswiferie. But (amorous Peate) seeing thou didst refuse to be a queene to Staurobates, & hast rather chosē to be a queane to Crisippus, whilest ẏ one doth abhor thy lightnes ẏ other shall abie his liking, wherefore my sentence is, that of thy death the sauage monsters do execuciō. yeat to thee, before thou passe to this pūnishmēt, ẏ hart of this leatcher thy louer (a gift no doubt more precious then ẏ price) shall be deliuered, that as liuing on lust (I cannot terme it loue) of two framed one Masse of wickednes, so perhaps dead, the bowells of one beast to eyther hearte may afforde one & ẏ same buriall. Thē cōmandeth he ẏ Crisippus should be foorthwith bound, & his heart to be carued frō out his body: whē the afflicted lady, hardly obteyning audiēce to vtter these few words, sayd, Alas, my deare Crisippus, how daintie a dowrie hast thou found my loue? how merciles a father in law hath thy wife giuen thee? I would ẏ price of my life might purchase thy libertie, but alas I wish to wel to obteine so well, let it therefore suffice for a poore comfort, ẏ thy Marpissa is gladly thy deathes-cōpanion, Crisippus hearinge these sweete speaches to proceede from her, ẏ had ẏ pre ēt possessiō & promised reuersion of his hart, not being suffred to acquite wordes with wordes, did only manifest ẏ integritie of his vnremoueable loue by oftē kissing ẏ deadly instrument ẏ should bereaue him his hart promised to Marpissa as a present.

CHAP. XXVII.

¶ Pheone discloseth her selfe vnto the two kings, reuerseth their rigorous sentence: telleth Crisippus discent, & her own former courses concerning her selfe and him &c.

The

The bruite of this ſeuere ſentence, thus paſſed vpon Criſippus and Marpiſſa, brought thether many pitifull beholders to haue ſene the threatned Tragedie: Amongſt the reſt (whilſt this beautifull Couple prepared to offer vp their liues as pledges of their conſtant loue) a very faire and moſt comely woman, who heretofore had been Nurſe to Criſippus and euer after vntill that day had been entertained in the ſeruice of the Marchant man his ſuppoſed Father, the teares aboundantly ſteeming from out her amiable eyes, in great anguiſh caſteth her ſelfe at the feete of the two Kings, and ſayth.

If ſo be (mercyfull, or mercileſſe Kings) you grant vnto me a ſillie woman like libertie of ſpeech as you haue giuē me cauſe of ſorrowe, then ſhall I commende your clemencie towards me that cannot but condemne your cruelitie towardes theſe two: whoſe anſwering ages, combyned affections, agreeable complexions, and what ſo elſe, and more then you knowe of gaining of equalitie loue are in either ſo concurrāt, as (in my iudgment) you might rather wiſh what is alreadye happned, than withſtand that which is nowe helpeleſſe. But leaſt I alſo ſwallowe vp that in ſcilence which vttered may perhaps rebaite from their ſorrowes, I ſhall nowe (as inforced thereunto) diſcloſe long hidden ſecrets. You will muſter when I ſhall Affirme, but marualle whē your ſelues cannot but Confirme ỳ Criſippus may claime no leſſe Nobility frō his Progenitors than Marpiſſa Honour by her Parentage, ỳ hee is an huſbande not vnworthye ſuch a wife, that the Iſſue (Selchim) of thy Fathers child is not of more royall blood, nor the Son (Staurobates) ſproong from the loines more noblier borne, you will muſe (I ſaye) when your ſelues ſhall auouch this that I auarre. Wherefore let it not ought agrauate to his puniſhment that Criſippus (ignorant of his right parents) acknowledgeth himſelfe the ſonne of a Marchant, or that frō theſe homely paps of mine (leſſe pleaſing then in times paſſed) he hath ſucked nouriſhment: but know, Selchim, that he is the naturall ſonne of pheone thy neglected ſiſter, ſhe the contracted wife of vnconſtant Staurobates, he the vnnaturall Father

of

of condemned Crisippus, and my selfe (Selchim and Staurobates) the same Pheone whome (happily) eyther of you hath longer lost than lacked, and the one of you (no doubt) longer lacked then loued: albeit, Staurobates, at thy departure and at the deliuerie of this Ring, (she shewed him a ring) thy flattering tongue could then whispere: That mine absence should bee bitter, and the delay of my presence Death. Now therefore if the one of you will deale graciouslye with his desolate Sister, and the other gently with his well deserning Louer, & eyther of you naturally with your distressed Children, then at the least be to them meere straungers rather than so mercilesse Parents; yea remember Staurobates, thou mayst not retain Marpissa but by lust, Pheone being alredy thine owne by Lad, whose life ought to stand betwixt thee & a Bigamus. By this time, and whilst she was yet speaking, Staurobates, hauing perfectlye fixed in the eies of his memorie the well knowne face and countenaunce of the amiable Dratrisse, giuing a signe to the Tormentors for stay of Executiō, earnestlye imbraced the Heroicall Nurse saying: Well mayst thou deuine of the prosperous successe of thy demaunde when no creature liuing can be so welcome to this place as art thou ẏ Demaundent. Thinke not that the homelinesse of thine habite, unworthy thine honour, or anye alteration whatsoeuer hath so beguiled my sences or estranged my loue but that I gladly acknowledge my selfe the husbande of Pheone; & thy selfe th'only she whō Staurobates accepteth for wife. Ah Pheone, had not thy misdeeme been more than my misdeeds thē had not thy ielous loue hapned so much to both our preiudice. But now well is me, and thrise happie be this houre wherein I reuiew whom I neuer did but loue or euer will but honor, then thee my deere and only beloued Pheone. And then, as he aleaged in his excuse those reasonable causes before touched, king Selchim (no lesse ioyfull to heare tidings of his Sister than was Staurobates glad to haue found his wife) imbrased her with as much loue for a brother as did the other for an husband, she as kindly resaluting and reconciling her selfe to

[illegible] either

richer. Crisippus & Marpissa were nowe delivered frō bands, and, after many ioyful teares, their passed marriage was also gladly confirmed by either parent, especially Staurobates demeaned exceding great ioy for ẏ recouering of his vnknowne sonne: of whom, & of her owne absence, Pheone in effect thus reported. That at Staurobates his departure into India shee, finding her selfe ouer-taken with his daliances that had left her neither Maid widdow nor wife, and not hearing frō him according to appointment, did therfore as well to auoyde the law, which was death, as ẏ shame of her fault, which was her great belly, leaue secretly the Court & in the Deserts was deliuered of Crisippus: whom (being at point otherwise to haue perished) shee swatheled vp, decking him with much gold and many rich Iewels, and laid him in a Path by which a homely countrie Matron vsually passed to milke her Cattell in those Deserts, her selfe in the meane while priuily watthing the euent of this her deuise. And how this good woman, finding so faire a Boy and so fat a bootie, presented the poore fisher-man her husband with such her findings: when therupon her selfe simply araied) repairing vnto their Cottage and asking entertainment, became Nurse vnto her own sonne. Then lastly, how the Fisher-man, by this windfall greatly enriched, & long sithence becom a Marchātman in that Citie, not hauing any child of his own, had adopted Crisippus (being vtterly ignorant of any other Parentage) his Son. This shee told and a generall Plaudiat dissolued the ioyfull assembly.

HEre is (qd. Abynados) loue vpon loue & Louers by huddles, a discourse trust me friuolous in telling, fruitelesse in hearing, but most foolish in Actiō: such loue being (in my conceit) so far off frō loue that I rather think it a doting Frenzie & enemy to Reason: for were it that such louing fooles could temper their extreme with a meane, thē wold they loue with more discretiō or leaue with lesse domage. With such like discourses did Th'assirians cut ẏ calme seas, & descrying a strang ship at anker not far off, they also did ẏ like, riding as nere to ẏ vnknown ship as conueniently they could: where not omitting to enquire after those in Quest of whom they thus sailed occasion of the Report now ensuing was taken. Deipyrus

Deipyrus.

CHAP. XXVIII.

¶ An entrie, by occaſion, into a newe reported ſtorie: And firſt of the inſecuritie of worldly bleſſe.

Calamus quintus.

It hapned yͤ after manye gentle ſalutatiõs paſſed & repaſſed on either part, it grew in the end to ſuch familiaritie as neither Companye doubted at their owne pleaſures friendly to boord and reboorde eche others: and whilſt the reſt ſeaſt merely and are tyed to the Canne by the teeth Arys made a long and lamentable repoꝛt to Tymætes the Lycian Captaine (for the ſtrange ſhip was of Lycia) of the miſſe oꝛ rather loſſe of Soꝛares and his companye, ſaying, thus hath Foꝛtune aſſailed the Father and now aſſaulteth the Children, triumphing on his Bale & thꝛeatning our Bliſſe. And no marueil, anſwered Timætes, conſidering that Foꝛtune is onely conſtant in conſtancie and as touching Bliſſe it may bee your opinion is heriticall, for that true Bliſſe in deede perfoꝛmeth a perpetuitie, whereas the flattering pleaſures of this woꝛld cannot pꝛomiſe one houres certainty,

and therefore it maye not bee aptly termed Bliſſe whereof a chaunge is to bee doubted: and yeat to attaine or rather to attempt the ſweeteneſſe of a cleare conſcience, to exerciſe Vertue, to combate with our affections, to eſchew euill and doe good, to loue all and hate none, and to liue in the worlde as not of the worlde, are (no doubt) great argumentes of bleſſedneſſe, but no full aſſurances of Bliſſe, for that none maye bee ſayde bleſſed vntill his laſt gaſpe hath diſſolued him from his naturall infirmities, and then, and not before, followeth bleſſedneſſe the ſtipend of vertue.

As for worldlye Proſperitie I eſteeme the ſame nothinge leſſe than proſperous, as a thing whoſe ſower neuer fayleth and whoſe ſweete euer fleeteth, as a ſpurre to wickedneſſe, and a bridle to wel-doing: yea, what glorious Titles of wealth can this Step-dame of Vertue bequeath vs that periſh not with or before the Poſſeſſors? ſo that, were not the followers of Fortune more blinde than their Guide, of the two Proſperitie and Aduerſitie they would accounte the latter as the more neceſſarie, becauſe it openeth the eyes of the heart that Proſperitie ſtopperh, and oftentimes redeameth Vertue as it were out of a filthie Dungion. But to wiſhe Aduerſitie is leſſe needefull than neceſſarie: for ſo infinite and incidente are the Calamities that follow vs euen from our Cradels, that well may we wiſh either not to haue beene borne or quickly to die, and ſo many are the wronges that men inflict vpon men that to reuenge all were impietie, and to ſuffer all impoſſible: wherefore Iniuries (thinke I) not honeſtly to bee diſſembled maye diſcreetely bee reuenged, or at the worſt to ſeeke or worke reuenge is ſo much the leſſe infamous by howe much the offered occaſion thereof is iniurious. That I ſhoulde thus mention iniuries you maye perhaps muſe, but whether there bee cauſe or no I make you my Iudges, thus ſtanding the caſe.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

¶ Tymetes telleth how Deipyrus distressed and afterward in a Forrest rescued out of perill a Queene & her two Infants.

After the continuance of long and wastfull warres betweene the Lydians & the Lycians a Truse for certaine yeres was concluded, for assurance wherof either side did deliuer their Pledges: the King my Father, (for a King is my father) sent into Lycia a Noble man his Nephew called Deipyrus, whome her had not long before preferred to a Dukedome & otherwise highly aduaunced: and the other king sent into Lydia a noble young Gentlemã called Xenarchus, whose Father is king of Cilicia, and also at this present vsurpeth in Lydia, whereof my father onely retaineth the name of King but he the Kingdome: and that by meanes of a Rebelliõ moued by the same Deipyrus after his returne frõ hostage, whereof thus followeth the circumstance.

Deipyrus partly of his own aspiring courage, partlye suborned with rewards by my Fathers enemie the then Lycian king, but chiefly for loue of Eurymone ye same king his daughter (with whom & him aw-lesse loue had alredy vnited harte) did secretly gather a Rebellious Armie, & suddenly besieged my Father in his owne Cittie. Hee seeing his Citizens not able to hould wage with the Besiegers, after long resistance, leauing behind him in the Cittie the Queene my Mother, & with her two Infants their children; conuaied himselfe into Cylicia theare desiring assistance against ye Rebels, the which in an euill hower he obtained. But or euer any rescue might be conuaied into Lydia, my Mother, fearing to stay the Sack of the Cittie and entrie of the foe, howerly expected, fled priuily with her two Infants into a great Forrest not far from the besieged Cittie: wheare rootes howes and such wylde berries as the place affoorded making an exchaunge of their wonted fare hardlye lingered the soules in their bodyes.

In the meane while the king of Cilicia landed his men, rescued the Citie, and pursued with great slaughter the flying Rebels: but mine vncle Deipyrus, the cheife Captaine and conductour of these trayterous Rebels, by chaunce recouered the before named Forrest, and by that meanes escaped the sword of the Pursuers. Long had hee not wandred here but that he heard the pitifull shriekes of a woman, wherfore making to the place from whence the sounde came he perceiued a Lady likely to haue been abused by two straggling Souldiors of Cilicia in whose defence at once he assailed them both, and in the end valiantly chasing them awaye deliuered her of their purposed enterprise: which done, not knowing whom he had so rescued, he demaunded what she was and how it fortuned her and her two Infants to wander so daungerously in the same Forrest. My miserable Mother (for it was my Queene Mother) not knowing in that case the man vnto whose questions shee was then to answere, dying her dropping eyes and falling at his feete, when she had stilled her younglinges who hugging about her necke cried out (which her selfe wanted) for foode, not daring to bewray what one she was, saide.

CHAP. XXX.

¶ What speeches and passions passed betwixt the wretched Queene and repentant Deipyrus, whilst either knewe not th'other.

Like as (good Sir) no deserts of mine other the your ownne valour perswaded you erwhile to vse courage in my defence euen so the defect of mine abilitie (respecting my wretched estate) may withdraw you from all hope of any small Recompence: onely accepte of her poore thankes that shall plie the gods with often prayers for a reward of your merits, who otherwise continually must rest your disabled debtor. But in that you aske what one I am, alas Sir, see you not that I am a most desolate woman? not beeing to begg though none lesse

leſſe happie then a Begger, who late dyd want nothing, and now haue nothing, not long ſince as wealthy as I nowe am wretched, able to haue harboured the beſt, but now more harbourleſſe than the moſt: & therefore ſeele I affliction ſo much the more burdenous by how much the more I once poſſeſſed abundance: for no want more miſerable, than to haue bene wealthie. Who is it that feeleth not or at the leaſt wiſe heareth not into what ſpoile and penurie the Rebels haue nowe left all Lidia? to auoyde whoſe outragious proceedinges I haue choſen with theſe my poore infants to linger out our dying liues in this Forreſt, though death (no doubt) would haue bene to vs far more ſweeter. Alas, yea endleſſe woe, betall that vngratefull Traitor Deipyrus the vnnaturall ruine of his naturall countrie: oh that once or euer theſe eies of mine ſhall leaue this light I might ſee the Caitife in like diſtreſſe (if like might be) as preſently am I, or that the Villaine were as nere my reach as euen now are your: then would I a-while aduaunce theſe womaniſh teares, and with theſe hands (vnaccuſtomed to ſuch deedes) claw out his trecherous eies. But (alas) to wiſh vengeance is nothinge leſſe then to be reuenged, for had I the hap to poſſeſſe my wiſh I haue the heart ſhould performe my will, or might my curſe preſoure him hell my bleſſe ſhould neuer preſer him to heauen. But leauing the Reprobate to a Pillis of miſeries which I doubt not will inſidently enſue his miſdeedes, may I (good Sir) requeſt your aide and wiſhall the preſent eſtate of our beſieged Citie.

Deipyrus with no ſmal remorſe noting the petitious diſtreſſe of the vnknown Queen my mother, & hearing himſelfe to him ſelfe ſo euill ſpoken of & banned, wiſt not what to ſay, as one but euen then ouertaken with the guiltineſſe of his own conſcience, which is euermore a ſeuere Accuſer & to the impenitent perſon a moſt terrible Judge: but in the end after ſome aſtonishment he made her this anſwere.

Lady qd. he (as perceiuing in her manye argumentes of Gentrie) by good reaſon ſuffer me loſers to chafe, neither is

it a newe thinge that a wronged woman in like bitter termes doth beare her passionate stomach? Deipyrus (I must confesse) being the common enemie to his Countrie hath incurred a common curse of the Lydians, whose chastisement being generally desired of all shall priuatly be reuealed only to you. The same man, Ladye, whose infamous Attempts hath returned the Attempter a iust guerdon of his deserts, and hee whose punishment would bee vnto you such pleasure presenteth himselfe before your eyes as hardly distressed as your selfe haue desired, and whosoeuer you are that Deipyrus hath so muche offended the same as humbly prayeth you of pardon: offering also into your handes mine owne weapon vppon mine owne blade to wreake your vengeance (if it shall so please you by death to shorten my penuance) or elle as your Bond slaue in your busines to employe my whole endeuour, if by life you thinke good to lengthen my punishment: for as I would not die a desperate Murtherer, Tormentor, & Traitor to mine owne person, so wish I not to liue a despised Runagate, Reprobate, and recreant to mine owne Countrie, wherefore you being the Iudge, the grieuous spectacle of these your pyning Infants mine accusors, and my selfe (which of it selfe is sufficient) pleading to the accusation guiltie, if you pronounce sentence of death against me you do but Iustice without partialitie, the executing of which sentence shall bee the accomplishment of your desire, and the reward of my deserts.

CHAP. XXXI.

¶ More of it that passed betwixte the Queene and Deipyrus in the Forrest: And what in the meane tyme befell the king her husband, through trecherie of a false friende reconcyled.

When Deipyrus had after this sort finished such his speeches, recounted to her after what maner ꝑ siege was raised by the King of Cilicia, deliuered into her hands his naked swoorde,

sword, & solemnly vowed not to resist her doome as touching his life or death, She thē grasping the yeelded weapon in her hand, was fully resolued to haue sheathed the same in the bowels of Deipirus: when by & by, altering her purpose by reasō of his so strange submission, and waying his lucke with her own losse, shee thinketh him already ouer seuerely punished, and her wronges sufficiētly reuenged; yeat anon casting her pitifull eyes vpon her pyning babes (rufully hanging about her for foode, not there to be had) her mildenesse was now conuerted to madnesse, and as one vtterlye resolute on his death in conceite shee imagined him alreadie deade, so fully was shee bent to bereaue him of life: but euen at the verie pushe from out her vnhardie hand shee lets fall the harmelesse weapon, & accuseth her selfe of ingratitude: shall I (thinks she) returne so gracelesse a recompence in lieu of his late so gratious an enterprise is it not much more gaine to me that I am deliuered of Ranishment, which had been incurable, than losse in that I am disgarnished of Riches, which are recuperable? yes, yes, the vertue of the first is more then the errour of the latter, why then should I not admit the one, & remit the other?

Thus reasoning with her selfe, as one offended with his passed Conspiracies, pacified by his present Contrition, and gratefull for his late profitable Combate, she dissembleth the first, accepteth of the second, and thanketh him for the third, onely desiring his assistance to puruaie for their succour, vntill hearing of more quietnes abroad they might with lesse danger leaue the comfortles Forrest.

Whereunto he readily condiscended, building them bowers, killing them victuals, and in what he possibly might in their reliefe imploying his whole industrie: not knowing of all this while who they were vnto whome he became so carefull an Attendant: albeit by circumstances he might haue been induced to the knowledge of his charge for my Mother, somewhat to be disburdened of the burning sorrowes of her bursting heart (for working vessels and wofull hearts the one by vent the other by wordes are deliuered from breaking) ta-

king occaſion, in the hearing of Deipyrus, to ſpeake of the king my Father would ſometimes vſe theſe ſuch like ſpeeches, ſaying: I would, Deipyrus, you could giue vs good warrantie of the King his wel-fare, as I promiſe with a performance betweene him and you of an Attonement: but (alas) notwithſtanding your diſcomfiture I am not ſo comforted that I reſt feareles of Cylician practiſes, well may the good King ſpede what euil ſo-euer I ſuffer, who not proſpering, I mine, and many perith: and therefore dare I ſay that with greater diſeaſe for his woe or gladder deſire of his weale his Queene and wife cannot labour than preſently doe I, that neither in the one nor the other do giue place do his beſt welwiller.

Thus did ſhe often make her mone a farre off, not daring in plaine tearmes to diſcloſe her ſelfe, remembring how dangerous it is to repoſe confidence in a reconciled enemie: in that point ſhewing her ſelfe better aduiſed then was my Father who giuing credit to the fained ſhewes of a friendly foe did learne by the priſe of a deere ſallarie the proofe of a dyle Diſſembler, and how to clime vp by the Breare is to be clawed with the Bramble: for my Father, making account to be reeſtabliſhed in his kingdom, receiued from the Cilician king this croſſe anſwere. Sir, qd he, your plentifull thankes are ſuperfluous, and your proffered liberalitie needeleſſe, for that you perhapps will thinke mee vnworthye ſo much, whilſt I thinke my ſelfe worthy of more, and therefore maye you proportion your thanks as it likes you, ſeeing my portion ſhall now be as it liſts me. Is it an eaſie matter (thinke you?) to tranſport an Armie out of Cilicia, to hazarde our liues in Lidia, and hauing incountred and conquered the enemie to conuert the glorie of the battel and gaine of the bootie to the profit of others? no, no, I maye profit you but not prejudice my ſelfe: Let it ſuffice that I haue corrected your Foes, and that your ſelfe eſcape vnreuenged of our auncient enmitie: ouer & beſides which vndeſerued friendſhip I giue you a Shippe in all thinges well furniſhed, with ſuffitient treaſure to ſupplye your expenſes: and thus knowing my minde the ſooner you

be

be packing the safer may it be for your person: as for Cilicia I haue Xenarchus my sonne theare to gouerne, and here in Lidia want I not souldiours to engarison.

Unto whom in few wordes my Father replyed, that iustly condemning his pretence and despysing his proffers it lastlye rested that Fortune his foe might one day crie quittance with falshoode his friende: and so onelye accompanyed of three or foure of his faithfull seruants (as doubting the worst) fled secretlye into the before mentioned Forrest: not knowing the same to bee the Receptacle of Deipyrus, much lesse of his missed wife and children, but least of all that the same his trayterous Nephew did in such sort minister to their necessities.

CHAP. XXXII.

¶ Of Deipyrus his great Contrision and Repentance, he being falne into a deepe Pitte: And how and by whome he was holpen theare-out.

Within this Forrest in a pleasant Glade the Shepeherds, to take Wolues and other rauening beasts haunting their Flocks, had digged a verie deepe and daungerous Pit, laying boughes slightly ouer-t-wharts, & so artificially couering the same ouer with greene Turues that the subtilitie thereof might hardly bee espyed; into which Pit Deipyrus, ranging abroade to seeke after sustenance for himselfe and his charge, at vnwares slipped: who seeing no possibilitie of deliuerance from thence complaineth after this manner. Sower is that sweete which decaieth in the blossome, but swete is that sower that dieth in ẏ bud: ah happy man, Deipyrus, that being forworne with Correctiō hast at the lēgth weried Fortune with correcting, & shalt anon present death with ẏ glad deliuery of thy ioyles life: & that not suddēly amongst ẏ impenitēt pikes, but slowlier thē thou wouldest euen in this Pit, wherein appereth the great mercy of the good gods in respect of the smal merits of sinnefull men. O that the secrete bowels of the earth, that thus denyeth not to burie me as no doubt the vpper face thereof disdayneth to beare mee, coulde

aſwell conceale my too haughtie ecrors as it doth couer mine humble Carcas: then ſhould my Treaſons which now ſeeme odious to the heauens, infamous to the world, hurtful to mane, deteſtable to all, and burdenous to mine own conſcience, then (I ſay) might ſuch mine offences surceaſe to ſtrutte deceaſed Deipyrus, which mine infamies (alas) will then bee hardly ripe when I ſhalbe happely rotten. Neuertheleſſe I am not nowe to dreade the worſte of mercileſſe men, that ſlowly forget, but to hope the beſt of the mercifull gods, that ſwiftly forgiue: nowe am I to ſitte vppon my ſelfe as Iudge and againſt my ſelfe to pronounce iudgement, that the Gods ſeeing more impartiall in mine owne caſe maye (as no doubte they will) ſpare me for the ſame cauſe: for it more ſtandeth vs vppon to confeſſe than to defend our follies. It is, alas, a common imperfection to offend, but an vnwonted perfection to repent: for why? the firſt ſpringeth from Nature, but the other from vertue: yea Nature (whereunto we eaſily incline) is in effect Securitie to ſinne, and feare of worldly ſhame blindeth vs to iuſtifie our ſelues: when (in deed) to liue in Securitie is not to die in ſafetie: for merete it is that the hony which ſeemed pleaſant in the mouth be conuerted to bitter wormewood in the ſtomack, and vtterly abhorred of the ſoule. Doth not the hoped-for ioy in the harbour moderate the ſuffered perils on the Seas? and the will to be releaſed of the maladie aſſwage the ſharpeneſſe of the medicine? and ſhall not I that grone with Repentance in mine heart hope thereby to gain refreſhmẽt to my ſoule? yes verely ſo to hope winneth an effectual hire. That we be Contrite it is neceſſary, ỹ our Cõtrition be equiparẽt to our Trangreſſiõs more neceſſarie, but the qualitie of our Repentance exceedeth the quantitie of our offences then is the ſame moſt acceptable. But (wretches that wee are) fleſhe and blood perſwade the contrarie, ſaying we ſcarce trip when (in deede) we ſtumble downe right, that the crime is verie light when the ſame is moſt weightie, that we ſhal liue long ẽ may at leaſure repent, when in a moment we are taken away or euer we thinke to amend, and ſo in the

end

end perish desperatly that persist diuelishly: for as the Gods are greatly delighted with Repentance, so are they grieuously displeased with Procrastination. It only remaineth then that I imbrace thee, O swete Repentãce, a burthen so much the lesse ponderous by how much thou encreasest in greatnes: to the pricked conscience thou art the persist consolation, & the only counterchange to deserued confusion: with thy feete only we run to mercie, and without thy winges flie we not from vengeance: thou (I saye) doest reprehend myne errors, and therefore will I apprehend thy vertues, neuer giuing thee ouer vntill I comprehend thy sweetenesse.

Whilest Deipyrus, most desirous to haue dyed, spake yet more in the darke pit, one while remembring the distresse of his guideles Charge left at randon in the dangerous Forrest, and often minding (whome hee made account neuer more to see) his deere Eurimone the King of Licia his daughter, whose loue was the greatest part of his interprised lewdnesse, but neuer forgetting with a penitent heart and bitter teares to send foorth his humble prayers as his soules Harbengers. It chaunced my Father and his Companye to wander along the same Glaede, and to heare those penytent and pearcing lamentations of vnseene and vnthought of Deipyrus. Wherfore, searching the place, they discouer the subtill pit, & then letting downe Wlithes and other Deuises, which they framed for that purpose, they drewe Deipyrus vp into the open ayre, that of a daye & night before had scarcely discerned any light of the sunne or starres.

CHAP. XXXIII.

¶ How the King after this their vnexpected interuiew dealt with Deipyrus.

When the King my Father beheld the plight of Deipyrus, & the same perceiued the presence of my Father, it was a world to note the alteratiõ of either in their Countenances.

Especially Deipyrus, consumed with the peasturnesse of his heart, infeebled through weaknesse of bodie, and confounded in the guiltinesse of his own Conscience, had better cause often to chaunge his colour, than (as it hapned) to haue feared my Fathers choler: Wherfore (nowe hopelesse of life) exclaiming against Fortune for such extraordinarie malice, & exclaiming of Death for that preamptorie delay, he fell flat to the earth as one vtterly bereft of sence: the Tender of whose dolorous passions might haue been pleaded in full Acquittance of all passed Trespasses, had ennie it selfe followed the Action, and Rigour occupied the place of Iudgement.

My Father (contrarie to all expectation) ouercomming Ire, and being himselfe ouercome by pitie, not without watry eyes lifting vp to Deipyrus, that shamed to looke him in the face, sayd.

If (Deipyrus) thou wert vnsuspitious of my nature, mindfull what I once was, and not ignorant what I now am, thou wouldst not suppose the Accident of the last to cause an Alteration in the first, that is, not thinke me a mercylesse Begger whom thou diddest know to bee a pytifull King: neyther wouldst thou doubt the authoritie of the second, seeing I that late might haue commaunded thee to Iudgement, doe not now dare in any place to demaund Iustice: & without Lawe to determine a wrong, is in Law to decline from right. Neuertheless, but euen now did I think it verie a hard thing to hold my tongue in anguish, harder to holde my handes in Anger, but hardest of all to forgiue thee mine Enemie: but Sufferance, the harts Phisition (I wot not howe preuailing) teleth mee nowe, that Anger should bee as short as the same is sudden that hastie Wroth is an harmefull Councellor, betwixt too much and too little not obseruing a meane that the end of Wrath is Shame or Repentance, or both and that the same euill may easily be auoyded if but a small time it bee deferred: for time, I perceaue, doth moderate Ire, and better man is he that wisely subdueth his Furye than he that with armour sacketh a Citie: neither is any reuenge more vali-

aunt

aunt then to pardon a foe that is vanquished. It is, I saye Deipyrus, but even nowe that no such Argument coulde haue perswaded what moderation my selfe doe now prosecute: and no maruell if my patience was then mooued when thine ingratitude was so manifested: for easilier do we suffer a wound fastened by a Foe, than sustaine a wrong offered by a Friend, as esteeming the first trespasse, but the latter Treason. With more greefe than gaine I see, by thine example (vnaduised Nephewe) I see it, that Enuie drinketh vp the greatest part of her owne poyson, and that whilest the minde flieth higher than it should the man falleth lower than her would: neither doe the same Effects euer follow the same affections for braue Intentes haue often times base Euents. Well (Deipyrus) seeing by thy death I may not recouer my losse, it shall suffice if by sparing thy life I may so reobtain thy loue, for be assured my kindnesse is yet as muche as our kindred and to thee I gladly participate this comfort (whereof my selfe am not yet destitute) that is, No degree of miserie may exceede a Superlatiue, and when Mischiefes are at the highest pitche then eyther succeedeth an Amendment or of necessitie an End: for at the worst, the hardest Winter of ioy hath death a Bound. But not to hope beyond hope say I (Deipyrus) is contrarie to courage; Yf still the same, I loose my name: Is sayde to bee Fortunes onely and pregnant Poesie.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

¶ How it fared and fell out afterwards, with the King, Deipyrus, the Queene, and her Infants.

NOw after many kind teares & intertainements, with mutuall report of their passed wrongs & present woes, wherein the misse of his Queene & two Children was not vnremembred of my Father, as a chiefe corasiue amongst his other sorowes, Deipyrus did tel of the Lady & her two Infants, ouer whom (as before) he had tak̄e charge in that Forrest, and was very desirous before their departure from thence to haue succoured their Distresse. Where-

Especially Deipyrus, consumed with the pensiuenesse of his heart, infeebled through weaknesse of bodie, and confounded in the guiltinesse of his own Conscience, had better cause often to chaunge his colour, than (as it hapned) to haue feared my Fathers choler: Wherfore (nowe hopelesse of life) only accusing Fortune for such extraordinarie malice, & exclaiming of Death for that preamptorie delay, he fell flat to the earth as one vtterly bereft of sence: the Tender of whose dolorous passions might haue been pleaded in full Acquittance of all passed Trespasses, had emulte it selfe followed the Action, and Rigour occupyed the place of Iudgement.

My Father (contrarie to all expectation) ouercomming Ire, and being himselfe ouercome by pitie, not without watry eyes lifting vp to Deipyrus, that shamed to looke him in the face, sayd.

If (Deipyrus) thou wert vnsuspitious of my nature, mindfull what I once was, and not ignorant what I now am, thou wouldst not suppose the Accident of the last to cause an Alteration in the first, that is, not thinke me a mercylesse Begger whom thou diddest know to bee a pytifull King: neyther wouldst thou doubt the authoritie of the second, seeing I that late mighte haue commaunded thee to Iudgement, doe not now dare in any place to demaund Iustice: & without Lawe to determine a wrong, is in Law to decline from right. Neuertheless, but euen now did I think it verie a hard thing to hold my tongue in anguish, harder to holde my handes in Anger, but hardest of all to forgiue thee mine Enemie: but Sufferance, the harts Phillition (I wot not howe preuailing) telleth mee nowe, that Anger should bee as short as the same is sudden that hastie Wroth is an harmefull Councellor, betwixt too much and too little not obseruing a meane that the end of Wrath is Shame or Repentance, or both: and that the same euill may easily be auoyded if but a small time it bee deferred: for time, I perceaue, both moderate Ire, and tender man is he that wisely subdueth his Furye than he that with armour sacketh a Citie: neither is any reuenge more valiaunt

aunt then to pardon a foe that is vanquished. It is, I saye Deipyrus, but euen nowe that no such Argument coulde haue perswaded what moderation my selfe doe now prosecute: and no maruell if my patience was then mooued when thine ingratitude was so manifested: for easilier do we suffer a wound fastened by a Foe, than sustaine a wrong offered by a Friend, as esteeming the first trespasse, but the latter Treason. With more greefe than gaine I see, by thine example (vnaduised Nephewe) I see it, that Enuie drinketh vp the greatest part of her owne poyson, and that whilest the minde flieth higher than it should the man falleth lower than hee would: neither doe the same Effects ouer follow the same affections for braue Intentes haue often times base Euents. Well (Deipyrus) seeing by thy death I may not recouer my losse, it shall suffice if by sparing thy life I may so reobtain thy loue, for be assured my kindnesse is yet as muche as our kindred and to thee I gladly participate this comfort (whereof my selfe am not yet destitute) that is, No degree of miserie may exceede a Superlatiue, and when Mischiefes are at the highest pitche then eyther succeedeth an Amendment or of necessitie an End: for at the worst, the hardest Winter of ioy hath death a Bound. But not to hope beyond hope say I (Deipyrus) is contrarie to courage; Yf still the same, I loose my name: Is sayde to bee Fortunes onely and pregnant Poesie.

CHAP. XXXIIII.

¶ How it fared and fell out afterwards, with the King, Deipyrus, the Queene, and her Infants.

NOw after many kind teares & intertainements, with mutuall report of their passed wrongs & present woes, wherein the misse of his Queene & two Children was not vnremembred of my Father, as a chiefe corasiue amongst his other sorowes, Deipyrus did tel of the Lady & her two Infants, ouer whom (as before) he had take charge in that Forrest, and was very desirous before their departure from thence to haue succoured their Distresse. Where-

Whereunto my Fathers answere was, that in their owne case delay might be dangerous, Lydia (sayth hee) at this daye affordeth more then ynough such distressed wanderers, whom not to be able to helpe it greeueth, and for whome to hurt our selues were not requisite: hee that once flieth maye againe fight: whilst the Prince lineth to hope the peoples case is not desperate: let vs not so admit pitie that we omitte matters of greater importance. This he sayd, as thinking nothing lesse than to haue theare seene those who theare hee neuer woulde haue sought.

Deipyrus, who seemed thus answered, but in his pytifull minde not satysfied, vndertaking (as hee that made himselfe best acquainted with that Forrest) to conduct his company theneareſt way to the Sea, did of purpose leade thē directly to that place wheare he had before left his helplesse Charge, & there he found them all three pitifully weeping, and vtterlye destitute of comfort.

No sooner did my Father behold this sight, but, as it were at once ouer-taken with extreame ioy & extreame griefe, hee forthwith sowneth: my Mother (for by this time thee knewe him) endeuouring to giue him succour did also labour in the selfe same Extacie. But either of them being anon recouered, and nothing omitted in passion word or actiō insident to so vnlooked for louing and lamentable a meeting, they consult of their safetie, and howe to proceede for the recouerie of Lydia from the vsurping Cilician.

In the end, induced by such profitable & discreete reasons as Deipyrus then aleaged, they all bend their iournie towards Lycia: where they were no sooner ariued but they hearde report of the Lycian Kinge his death, and perceiued great prouision to enthronize in the Soueraintie Eurymone Deipyrus his Lady and louer.

Deipyrus not a little ioyfull of these tidinges, and affying in his Ladie her Constancie, with the rest of his company (vnknowne to all that met them) repayred to the Court: & where he had theare disclosed himselfe and his distressed friendes to

Eurymone,

Eurymone, ſhe comforted them with ſuch honourable & hartie entertainement as did both giue a perfection to their hope and a defection from all heauineſſe taking (according to their former couenant of loue) Deipyrus to huſband: who ioyntlye at this day rule King and Quene in Licia. And theare haue my deſpaired parents euer ſince liued in ſuch proſperitie that their eſtate might be ſayd an aduancement: in whoſe quarrell alſo Deipyrus for the recouerie of Lydia hath long time maintained ſharpe warres againſt the King of Cilicia: towardes whome to entreate of diuers waighty affaires giuen mee in charge I am now ſayling.

CHAP. XXXV.

¶ How by a fight in the Lycian Ship and Tymetes his ſpeeches, Atys & Abynados had hope concerning their Father, with him they ſayle into Lydia.

Before the curteous knight Tymetes had finiſhed this his ſpeeche, Atys and Abynados had eſpyed in the Lycian Ship a very faire Targer, whereupon was curiouſly engrauen and in lively couloures purtraied the terrible Image of enraged Semiramis, in ſuch manner as ſhee behaued her ſelfe when, being informed of the beſieging of Babilon, ſhe ruſhed from out her tiring Chamber, her eyes ſeming to ſparcle fier, in her hande brandiſhing her weapon, and her flaſhing hayre looſely wauing vpon her bare ſhoulders, as hauing vowed not to bind vp the ſame vntill ſhe had vtterly expelled the Beſiegers: the which (notwithſtanding the great ſtrength & number of her enemies) with fortunate expedition ſhe performed as valiantlye in deede as ſhee hath vowed the ſame courageouſly in word. The two brethren (as I ſaid) earneſtly beholding this Targat, could not perſwade themſelues but that ſame once appertained to Sorares their Father, in whoſe hand whē he diſcomfited frō Nimuie they had ſeene it: wherefore after they had opened their thoughts and mooued ſome queſtions

concerning the same, such was Tymetes his answere.

In Sarmatia (qd. he) a warlike nation in Scithia, from whence I now come and whither I am shortlie to return, dwelleth an vncle of mine, of whose guift I receiued this Target, the which together with an infinite masse of Treasure, Apparell, Armour, & other Ornamentes after the Median & Assirian fashion came to his possessiō through the arriuall of a distressed Ship being driuen into his Countrey, wherein remained two Meades, & the same very aged and impotent persons: of whose aduentures I am not able to make any further report, sauing that they seemed to take great vnkindnes, of the auarice and cruelte of certaine Assirians, whom they had left shiples in a barren Iland: but being neuertheles most desirous of their deliuerie, mine Uncle hath promised to satisfie them therein, as soone as the season of the yeare serueth to crosse those blustring and dangerous Seas, and trust me Gentlemen, it is not vnlikely (whereof I thought not before) but that these Assirians may be your Parentes & friendes after whom you make this enquirie: if therefore (for I imagin it shal be worth your labour) it may please you first to saile with me into Lydia, & after to returne into Sarmatia, I promise you my company thither for your conduction and my credit in either Countrey for your Countenance.

The Assirians gathering much hope of such Tymetes his comfortable tydinges, and thankfully accepting what he courteously offered, disanker with him and sayle into Lydia: neither could they sayle much awry that to finde out Sorares they knew not when, and were to seeke they wiste not where. To shorten therefore their sayling in Lydia I now lend them: whereas the Kinge of Cilicia vsurpingly was then resident there, through his tiranny was occasioned this following Tragedie.

Aphrodite.

CHAP. XXXVI.

¶ Xenarchus his friendly aduertiſement to Tymetes, to beware of falſhoode in fellowſhippe, Lidia and the louelye Laſſes there diſcribed.

Calamus ſextus.

Not long after they had taken lande Xenarchus, a moſt deare friend to Tymetes, and Tymetes ſuch and the ſame to Xenarchus, betwixt whom (notwithſtãding the deadly enmitie & implacable diſcord ſo long time continued and daielye encreaſinge betwixt the two kings their fathers (for Xenarchus, as is before ſayde, was Sonne to the King of Cilicia) Nature, in reſpect of the Symphatie of their mindes, in two bodies ſeemed to haue plãted but one and the ſame hart, immediatly, I ſay, as Tymetes had ſet foote on Shoare he met Xenarchus redy to haue taken Ship, who after many friendly greetinges, ſayde.

It fareth with me (friend Tymetes) as with one that hauing delightfully dreamed, is therefore diſpleaſed with ſuch delighte becauſe the ſame was but a dreame: I that ſcarſlye haue tyme to bid thee welcome, muſt vrge leaſure to giue thee a fare-well, otherwiſe in ſhewing my ſelfe a dutifull friend I ſhould be thought a diſobedient Sonn, and to vs eyther twaine the dammage might proue all one, I haue (Tymetes) more newes then tyme to tell it, onely thinke it ſtandeth vs vppon

to be circumſpect of our tri-partite familiaritie begone with Mazeres, leaſt thereby our by-parted friendſhippe be called into queſtion by my Father: for I perceiue nowe the hawke beginneth to checke that ere-lohile came ſo freely to fiſt: thou maieſt trie him but doe not truſt him, ſo farforth eſteeming Mazeres thy Friend as thou ſhalt make account Mazeres may bee thy Foe, for the Countenance may double with the Conſcience & therfore to Flatterers prayſe vs becauſe they would prize vs: by this much thou maiſt anatomize a meaning. I hope to find thee here at my returne from Cylicia, meane while let friendſhippe and often recourſe of Letters make vs preſent in minds that are abſent in perſons. And thus ſorrowfull taking their leaues they departed either of them his ſeuerall way.

When Tymætes, Atys, Abynados, and their company had beſtowed themſelues in Sardis, in which Citie the Court thē lay, and after Tymætes had conferred with the King, & whilſt he attended his deferred anſwere, they with the leſſe tediouſneſſe to paſſe forth the time of their abode in Lidia, one while frequent the delectable Springes, ſweete Groues, and braue proſpectiue Hill dedicated to the Meonian Muſes, and another while doe as much wonder at the glittering Riuers Pactolus and Hermus caſting on ſhoars their goulden Sands, as delight in the muſicall Quier of Swannes that ſweete'y ſing on the bankes of Eniſter.

But neuer could they glut their hungrie eies in beholding the Reulike faire Troupes of Lidian Laſſes, amongſt whom Nature might rather ſeeme for her owne learning to haue borrowed beautifull Preſidents, than able vpon them to haue beſtowed braue Perfections: in furtherance whereof the gētle Plannettes, temperate Climate, fertil Soile, and what not? were in all things occurrant: ſo that not without good reaſon, were the Nimphes of Meonia called terſene Goddeſſes, aſwel in reſpect of themſelues as their allotted Paradiſe: & not only to the iocond Venerian, but euen vnto the melancholie Saturneſt it might haue moued delectatiō to haue view-

ed

ed these lovely Wenches, with their faire dependant Tresses shadowing their iuorie shoulders: & to haue seen how their short Frocks of silke girt to their small Middles (being sometimes amiddest their wanton Daunces whisked vp by the wind) discouered their demy buskins, smothly planted with buckels of golde to their daintie Ancles, and eftsoones bared their white knees:

Atys (as it seemed) delighted with these Starres (chiefe Principles, no doubt of his Astrologie) remembring the Scythian Lord his late vnanswered Inuectiue against this swete Sexe, and now feling himselfe amorously animated to speake somewhat in their defence saide to Abynados, in the hearing of diuers Ladies and gentlemen as followeth.

CHAP. XXXVII.

¶ Atys frameth an Apologie for women: condemning the too curious prying of men into their Infirmities.

LIke as (saith he) the dead Sea Aspaltus in Syria is indifferentlie commended, in respect that no liuing Creature may therin miscarrie, as condemned in that no liuing Substance therein doth ingender, euen so our Scythian hoast (in mine opinion) shewed himselfe no more curteous by his bounteous intertaining of wanderers, than currish by his byting fr:aying against Women, blaspheaming all because beguyled of one. Bees with honnie haue their stinges, and we all haue our faultes, admit the goodwife play foule, should therefore the goodman play the foole? I say no, least he beginning the quarrell at home to ciuile vnquietnes adde impudent perseuerance, and then housholde iarrs shall bid his good-dayes goodnight: but in any case if Venus be found in Coniunction with Mars, let Vulcan shew his cunning onely in concealing, and rather sleepe to Beagles than awake Bandogges: otherwise for Iusticers hee shall but finde gibers, and those that should rather be alike detected than alike suspected: for whe

thinges are published for common they are then practised fo
currant, and then, what with first Play-feares and last smel
feastes, in daine shal Iunos heardsmā watch Iupiters herfar

The Fox most most of all mistrusteth the Foxe, neyther i
the deceiuer fearelesse of deceit, and were it not (thinke wo
men) that iealous men did themselues falsly enter, they woul
not suspect Women to beare men to many: wherefore (sill
soules) play they faire or play they foule, seeing themselue
alike suspected, they houlde it but good reason to requite suc
open sorrowe, by the aduantage of some priuie sollace, & wi
venture, if but for a reuenge. And as iealous men do thus th
rather helpe forwardes the secret escapes of women, soe als
may be added, that with importunate suites, charming word
intising guiftes, opportunitie of time and place, and by a thos
sand other deuises of sufficiencie to moue mountaines, they
good, but not desied natures (the which to circumuent menn
neuer cease to fish for opportunities) be laboured. It restet
then seeing the Eye, the Eare, and the conceit, are the onel
surfets of such sicknesse, that I see and I see not, is a souerai
emplaister to one so wounded, not to see, nor to desire to see a
especiall preseruatiue against such maladies, but he that wi
neyther see it, heare it, nor beleeue it, shall haue more then c
Phisicke warrant, neuer to dye with swallowing of fly-bloes
and except his stomacke be more squemish then the fishe ouer
flowen of the Birde Aspra, not at all feele the same contagi
ous. Let it suffize, that Women as they be subtle in counsel
soe are they secret in conuaiance, for he that woulde first blow
to vncouple shall be the last that commeth into the fall: but t
him that curiously searceth a Knife wherewithall to cut hy
owne Throate, I say Argus his head to be wel worthy Mercu
rie his handling. Hetherto haue I brieflye, not as I could
alleaged the best for those against whom mighte bee obiecte
the worst.

CHAP

Aphrodite.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

¶ More in diſcomendation of their Detractors, and in Cõmendacion of women.

BVt what ſhall I ſay to theſe ſtoicall Preſciſians that doe barke out all their Raylings againſt all Women in generall? ſhall I tearme them ſickly lompes without lyfe, Fiers without heate, Ghoſts without ſubſtance, or Shadows without Sence? not ſo: but as the beaſt Chimera hath a lions face but a Dragons taile, ſo thoſe beaſtes haue continent wordes, but vnchaſt workes, & ſeeme deuout, when (in deede) theire deuotiõ is nothing leſſe thẽ their ſeeming: for they fare with Women as do Riders with their Horſes, who ſpur them not to run from them, but to run with them, or as Lapidaries with their pretious ſtones, that hew them not for anger, but for aduantage. Some of which ſort, liue not ſingle as pretending to liue chaſt, but deny mariage as preuenting a charg, or (like the Fox that will eate no grapes) haue not Venus becauſe they hate them, but hate Women becauſe they cannot haue them, ſome other whoſe affections no doubt could afford them to loue, did not their infirmities inforce them to leaue, playe therefore the enuious dogge in the Manger: but much more ſafer were it ſay I, for ſuch Hipocrites to be iuſtly reproued for incontinent ſinners, than falſly reputed for chaſt liuers, for then the diſcloſing of the one might procure them humble ſpirites, whereas the diſſembling of the other puffeth vp their hawtie ſtomacks: whom if we ſhould admit to be ſuch as they ſeeme, yet far more commendable is poore Patrimony, than proude Chaſtitie.

¶ It is, truſt me, moſt ridiculous to heare, how that theſe Monſters vſuipe monſtrous the Manners and the beutifull Ornaments of Women, which they doe receiue naturally, or elſe apply to beautifie: as if (forſooth) like of Sheepe, ſeeing water they muſt needes thyrſte, or greene Meadowes fall

fall to grasing: when in troth not the Wardrop nor the Woman, but their owne wanton Inclinations setteth Flaxe easilye on burning. And yeat (Ladies) these are they who giue foorth that your naturall beauties are no other then artificial shadowes, if you keepe in then they say you are seruing your Customers, if you walk out then seking for Cliants, if brauelye apparrled then Players, if meanelye attyred then Pastocks, if you bee merrie then immodest, if modest then sullen, if you keepe not companie then proude, if you keepe company then light, if easily caught then ouer kinde hartes and as readye to checke, if wisely deferring your choise then ouercruelly minded and too tedious the suite, if you will not be courted at all then disdaynfull, if any be admitted to conference then suspected, if you bee rich they woo your dowries, if poore they waye not your vertues, if beautifull they couet the fleece, if not they cast off the Croone, if soft sprighted they doubt newe Competitors, if sharpe witted they dreade olde Copesmates, if you tell them of profit they terme you Pratlers, but should you bee silent when they are carelesse then will not they bee tongue tied to call you bad Huswiues: in a word (I wot not with what furie moued) in all things they oppose themselues to your vertues. But I may say, & say truely, that, next to the Gods, we are most beholding to women: for if to be borne into the world be a benefit, euen from the their strained wombs wee are proceeded: if to bee fostered vp, and that with their bloode, bee kindnesse, euen from their stretched papps was it sucked: if charie attendance (being of our selues noysome & helpelesse) be charitie, euen with their often filed handes were wee cherished: what shall I say? more worketh in vs to our behoofes the nature of our Mothers, than the influence of the Plannets: for admit we the opperation of Luna in our feeble Infancie, of Mercurie in our vnstable Childhoode, of Venus in our effeminate Adolescencie, of Sol in our florishing Youth, of Mars in our stayed Manhoode, of Iupiter in our temporate Seniorie, and of Saturne in our decripite olde age, or the dominion or constellation of the twelue Signes or any the stars

at

at all times, yeat who knoweth not, that euerie of these successiuely continue but their seasons: neither is there any ineuitable necessitie, others then our owne sensitiue appetites, that doth violently drawe vs to the seuerall dispositions of the Planets, for the Wise man is sayde to gouerne the Starres. But the vnseperable operation and naturall inclination of the Mother towards her Sonne, is a disposition vnremoueable and without ende: for can shee forget a part of her owne flesh? no, but euen from the Springe of our Infancie, to the Sōmer of our youth, the Haruest of our Manhood, the Winter of our Old-age, yea after our funerals, and in our Children, her tēder care of vs doth rather increase then in any part diminish: so that (if wee remember our selues) vnrequitable are the duties, wherein we are most deepely indebted to our Mothers: and yeat many times, such is our vnthankfulnes, that what they prodigally deliuered without meane, wee nigardlye repaie with scanted measure, and such is often the corrupt nature of man, that where he oweth most theare hee loueth least.

CHAP. XXXIX.

¶ Hee further prosecuteth the praise of Women, and of Matrimonie.

IT is moreouer to be noted, that Nature (whom wee must graunt to bee perfit in all her Actions) foreseing that without the helpe of women the depopulation of the world woulde followe; to the intent therefore that men should bee the more capable of their Imbracements, hath infused throughout the whole linamentes of their delicate bodies and sweete faces such aboundance of beautie, that wee seeing the excellencye of the same to shine in our eyes like precious Carbuncles, hoisting vp the sailes of our hope, & drawing neere vnto them in the Ships of our hearts, become, after many pleasant perils, first Marchantes and then Maisters of such inualuable

Jewels: though not at all times with such speed as we would yeat with a more profitable suite then we wish: without crossing is no creowning, by the laboursome acquiring of womē we are, say I, not a little profited in valour, and wisedome: for when they haue thus set our teeth amorously on edg, it stādeth vs vppon artificially to whet our wits: that our tongues hunt for eloquence in presence to delight, and our heades for inuentions in absence to deserue: in our dealings we thē must be circumspect, in diet temperate, & in apparell decent, with all which loue doth furnish vs & by all which loue is furthered. Adde also that their loue teacheth vs to be valiant in Chiualrie, & venterous in Armes, to think seare a fault, and nothing impossible, to exercise all thinges, to enterprise most thinges, and in somewhat to be exquisite. Be yt so (which may be denied) that by wowing we are loosers, yet doth it follow (which all must confesse) that by winning wee are gayners: who attayning at the length to be possessors of our coueted prises, cōmaund in triumph-wise our subdued troubles to followe like chained captiues our victorious Chariots, yea & by how much more greeuous we accounted the foughtē Conflict, by so much the more glorious we esteeme the fulfilled conquest. But now if I (that ame in deede a fresh-man and bad sophister) should in hearing of those who haue proceeded maisters in that Arte, reason of the Briding, the Bedding, and many other merymentes insident to Marriage, I shoulde proue my selfe a Dotrell in comparison of a Doctor: for Practicioners not Puples must occupie Pulpits, and to frame a Cōmentarie, that cannot make a construction, were to propound a Probleme & to expound the same with an Oracle: wherfore ommiting to Paraphrase vppon such mysteries, I will (Ladies) after an Epitome of the great blessinges of Wedlocke, make a sparing Conclusion of of your vnspeakable cōmendations. That the gods themselues, were the first Institutors of Mariage it is probable, that thereby our fleshelie appetites be not only qualified with a more ciuill Coiture than might seeme brutish and offensiue to nature, but also that the worlde multyplyed

with

by a legitimate, no backardly Propagation, muſt be granted: but (which is more) marriage, no doubt, being a thing miraculouſlye conſtituted through a mutuall participation of whatſoeuer they poſſeſſe, and free Communitie of their own perſons, being (as I maye tearme it) by Tranſplantation, two in one fleſh, worketh one and the ſame will, wiſh, loue, liking, or diſliking, affection, defection, and affliction betwixt the man and woman coupled in Matrimonie: eſpecially the Wife, by a more inſcrutable, playne, zealous and profounde forwardneſſe in Conſent, in all affaires and in all thinges ſeruable to the nature, conditions, diſpoſitions, will and eſtate of her Huſband: in proſperitie a partner of his wealth, in aduerſitie a partaker of his woe, & in both a comfortable companion: in health ſhee fillieth him with delightful ſollace, in ſickneſſe ſhee followeth him with dutyfull ſuccour, and in all things is a conſtante counſellor and concealor of his purpoſes: bee he poore or bee he rich with her vertue, dowrie, or diligence ſhe increaſeth and maintaineth his ſubſtance: to the noble and innoble ſhee beareth heires to inherite their diſcending poſſeſſions, Sonnes to eternize their deceaſed Progenytors, and Children to be comforte their diſtreſſed Parents. In a word, it is commonly ſeene that, being vnmaried, we are inconſtant in thoughtes and incontinent in workes, or if neyther of both, yeat ſuſpected in eyther of both, but being maried, of contented myndes, and conuenient Manners, or yf not ſuch as we ſhoulde, yeat vnſuſpected for ſuch as we are: becauſe mariage not onely is pleaſaunt and affable to the good, but alſo doth credite and countenance euen the bad. Sweete Ladies, no tyme longer woulde I liue, than doe I honour you, but then may I die when I proue a recreant to your Prayſes, and that I doe ſpeake this eyther for faſhion or for flattery, or that I grounde mine opinion, altogether vpon an vnperfect foundation, let not any immagine: for Nature it ſelfe by an vnrepealable Lawe, doth inioyne vs to your loue, and amongeſt menne by a lawdable cuſtome, your

honouring, hallowing, reuerensing, and protecting is especially prouided for. To conclude therefore, such as are prayers after the naturall faults, escapes, and infirmities of women, I wish neuer to be partakers of the profit, pleasure, and bountie of women: and no doubt I haue already my wish, for not to excuse the former, is not to vse the latter.

CHAP. XL.

¶ The Censure of Atys his Auditorie touching the foresayd Appologie, how Mazeres procured the apprehension and imprisonment of Timætes, Atys, and Abynados.

BRother (qd. Abynados) I commend your pollicie, in that you haue chosen the stronger side, framing your answere in a place dangerlesse of a Replie: and the rather for that by long continuing your matter you haue, I coniecture, discontinued our memories: as for your Methode it is sufficient, because your meaning may bee supposed: neyther doe I thinke you flatter women in least, because I know you fauour them in earnest.

Indeede (qd. Atys) in that we be brethren, the rather you may presume that we participate such or the same properties: but had I coueted praise (as the same was cõtrarie to my pretẽce) neat brotherhood is a bad colour to Bracerie, for had I solicited any to suppoze my sayings, of all others I would not haue suborned your soothinges: not only because of our nere aliance, but (which your selfe haue confessed) because of your shoze memoze: & wel had you done in not arrogating to your owne shittle wit, had you not derogated from the sensible capacitie of others.

Amongst brethren, Friendes, Aduocates, and Orators (qd. Timætes) it is common to haue like brawling without buffeting, and bickering without blowes: and in such quyet quarrels bread through emulation, and not begun vpon enuy, the eares perhaps may itch and the tongue scratch, but with the

the sound endeth all stomack: for mine own part, Atys, howsoeuer Abynados doth like or myslike of the matter, what I cannot amend by words I admit by signes, & therefore, without more, in token that I gladly gratifie your Commendation of women, I passe my iul consent therin vnder this Seale of Confirmation: and therewithall hee fastened a kisse vpon Aphrodite her soft cherie lipps.

This same Ladie was daughter to the king of Gilicia, now vsurper of Lydia whose fortune, had it been proportionable to her feature, should haue left her lagge to none in blisse as shee out-went all others in beautie: her loue towards Tymætes, though it appered later then her brother Xenarchus his frendship, yeat had not this ran the faster this might haue giuē the turne: but for that her loue might not out strip his friendship I leaue the Corse indifferent, and Timætes thus far an happie man in friend and louer.

Then Aphrodite, with blushing cheekes and a softly voice sayde to Tymætes: Sir, would I cauell, I might saye your Confirmation to bee voidable, no print appearing of the impression and for you to alleage the seale over soft or the waxe too harde will not be pleadable neither to haue sealed before witnesses shall, I feare me, fall out for Atys his securitie, or your and my safetie: for though my selfe am not squaimish of your orderly kisses, yeat it may be, there is one gone out that will bee quarilous for such open kindnesse. You are not (I trow) to learne, that loue and Principallitie brooke no Coparners, and therefore Mazeres as touching me no Competitour, howbeit in your loue no likelye Coriuall: but to wyn Atlas his Apples behoueth charmes for Dragons, to wo wee Ladies in Mollosse sops for Cerberus, and to conuay Aphrodite into Lycia warinesse in Lydia. Then turning to Atys, with a more audible voice she sayeth, I haue heard, ẏ whilst the vaine glorious Crowe opened her beake to sing the flattering Fox obtained a bootie by flight, but if you (Atys) haue let slip for the like suppose, you must leape short of the like successe for the plentie of your Retorick hath bred a scarcitie of

Regarders. What man, we can disgest Porke, yeat may you cloy vs with Pewits: say myght you without shame, and sweare may I without sinne, that Women are not so precisly good as you pretende to make them, neyther so perfectly badde as I intende you meane them. I will aske you a Quest.

But here, or euer she might adde, tion, the surplusage of the worde Question, shee was (good Lady) inforced to conclude a periodus, not being come to ẏ Comma: (inuited to this bytter banquet, by Mazeres, whose madding iealousie had hammered this mischief, as not disgesting such familiaritie which contrary to his liking had euen now passed betwixte Tymetes and Aphrodite) the cruell King her Father and a many his Seruantes, with vnsheathed Swordes and threatning looks, suddenly rush into the place wheare this guiltles Companye were thus securely chattinge: who, after many opprobrious speaches, hailing Tymetes Atis, and Abynados from thence, cast them all three into a most vile dungion: wheare had not Aphrodite by extraordinarie meanes amended their ordinary meales, they had all pyningly perished.

CHAP. XLI.

¶ How the woefull Father of Tymetes, both by warre and faire wordes, endeuoureth the deliuery of his Sonne: and of his Passionat speaches.

NEwes of Tymetes his immartiall imprisonmẽt, was anon conuayed into Licia, wherupon the depriued king his Father, acompanied also with his nephew king Deipyrus, sodainly landed an huge Armie of Lician souldiours in Lydia, girting Sardis with a strong siege, howbeit the impregnable scituation of the strong walled Cittie without, and the abouundance of Menne, Victualls, & Artillery within, mighte haue discouraged the besiegers to Assaile, as the same incouraged the Besieged to resist: And therefore, after two Moneths, the barbarous vsurping King (as it were in despightfull ostentation

tion to shew how litle he forced or feared his enemies) causing Tymetes, loden with Irons, to appeare on the Walles; and waning to the Lycians as though he purposed a parlie, when the father of Tymetes was come within his hearinge, he sayd, Tymetes is the man (ye Lycians) for whose inlargement your Armies nowe occupie Lydia, if therefore this deliuerie may suffice, be not then hopelesse, for him shall you anon haue, although headelesse: and yf you shall determine to recompence me for the deede, thinke not but that the stoutest in your camp shall eye in my debt.

Here withall three or fower Ruffians, whom hee had appoynted Instruments for that butchery, fettle themselues about their busines, *Mazeres* also prosecuting the murder to effect.

This hearing and seeing the King his Father, who (as yt were breathing out the sorowes of his soule) thus sayth, May not myne already sustayned wronges suffice to glut thy sauag woodnes, but wilt thou also adde the butchery of my Sonne, (my deare and onely Sonne) that the death of the Childe may salute the decease of the Parent? alas, doe not soe, suffer thy crueltie to haue an end, that my miseries may haue some meane. Thy selfe hauing a Sonne, shouldest bee acquainted the tender affectious of a Father: but yf not therefore, yeat knowe that my selfe was once in thy present Dignitie, & thy selfe art ignorant of thy followinge Destinie: Wretch that I am, what is past my now aduersitie maketh me now greatlye to remember, as no doubt what is to come thy now prosperitie causeth thee to forget: thinke, thinke, that the heauens may one daye be to thee and to thy *Xenarchus*, such and the same as presently they are to mee and my Tymetes, and therewithall Consider what wracke of felicitie woulde followe thee a Childelesse Parent. O that thou wouldest, as in trothe thou shoudest, applye this not impossible possibylitie to thy selfe and thyne, then mighte I bouldelye appeale

from:

from my ſelfe to thine owne ſentence, with aſſured hope of my Sonne his ſafetie. If therefore, the example of my fal, the vncertaintie of thine owne Fortune, the Supplication of a King, the Peace of thy Countie, the ſubmiſſion of a Foe, the interceſſion of a Father, the teares of an old man, the regard of Iuſtice, or the innocencie of Timætes maye now preuayle, with my tongue I proteſt, it with my heart I vowe it, and mine Act ſhall performe it, that his raunſome ſhall bee the reſignation of mine whole intereſt to this my betrayned Kingdome. But if none of theſe, any of which might be of ſufficiencie, neither the Gods that ſhall punithe the tyrannie, the world that ſhall ſpeake of thine infamie, nor thine owne guiltie conſcience that ſhall laſtly accuſe thee, if none of theſe, I ſay, can worke thy flintie heart to a fleſhlye ſubſtance, yeat know that the Lycians, not without the aſſiſtance of other nations, will, I am ſure, vow the laſt drop of their deereſt blood, to reuenge ſuch inhumane cruelitie yea pittie thine own people that ſhall bute his death ouer dearely.

CHAP. XLII.

¶ Tymætes his magnanimitie, his opinion and contempt of death, and of his End.

WHen thus much was ſpoken in vaine (for Tyrants are ſo much the leſſe tractable, by how much the more they are intreated) Tymætes, rather dying in the griefe of his Father, then dreading the death wherewithall himſelfe was threatned, ſpake as followeth.

I am (deere Father) inioyned an ouer grieuous penuance, that being patiently reſolued of a ſimple death doe nowe alſo, by your impatience, liue a dying life, wherby my death is rather doubled thā deferred. You are not, I know, aduiſed how you enuie my good happ, becauſe not aduertiſed how you hinder my ſweete hope, which hope is death, and Death the ſalue for all ſorrowes, and the Deliuerer of the immortall Soule from the Priſon of this mortall body: neyther is yet the ill

Death

Death but the well dying we are to account of, for not the stifling Halter of Hempe, or sinking pyllow of downe, doe in any thinge helpe or hinder our passage to Heauen. Bee not greeued in that your Sonne is punished, but bee glad in that he hath not deserued such punnishment: were I guiltie, perhaps, my death should disquiet you the lesse, when in that I am innocente you oughte to bee quieted the more: as Nature doth moue you to lament the death of your Sonne, soe let reason learne you the qualitie of your Seede, which is mortall: if because I am yonge you wish my life might be prolonged, I aunswere in not dying Olde, my Sorowes are abridged: if you can-not (as perhappes you doe not) disgest the blouddie Triumphe of your dishonorable Enemie, then doe not (as no doubt you doe) double his Ambition with the bootcles expēce of your ouer humble peticions: for thinke not that this Tyrant, who cannot lengthen his owne dayes one momente, can of hymselfe shorten my date one minute, but that the Gods (for so I hope) readye to accept of my soule, haue made hym an instrument to seperate it from the body. Wherefore (good Father) seeing that death is both necessarie, and also ouertaketh vs all of necessitie, & seeing I auarre the one by Triall, neyther may you auoide the other by trauerse, with the reuerent dutie of a Sonne I require it, and without the partiall affection of a Father I beseech you to graunt it, that your impatience may not driue those teares to my harte, which (not with a desperate minde doe I speake it) this butcherly penāce shall neuer drawe from mine eyes.

More might hee not be suffered to speake, but his head being stroken frō off his shoulders, was together with his bleeding body, at Commaundement of the Tyrant, cast ouer the Walles, amongest the sorrowfull *Lycians*, to the view of hys sowning Father: which dead body of Tymetes was anon solemly interred in the accustomed Sepulchres of his Auncestours, somtimes Kinges of *Lydia*, neere adioyning to *Sardis*.

Aphrodite.

CHAP. XLIII.

¶ Aphrodite with Teares frequēteth the Tombe of Tymetes. Atys and his brother are cōuayed out of Priſon. Xenarchus to reuenge his friendes death combateth *Mazeres*, & what enſued.

VVInter was now at hand, and the *Lycians* perceiuinge themſelues rather waſted then their enemies wearied, prepared therefore to breake vp their Siege, intending at the nexte Springe to haue returned with all the forces that they might poſſiblie leuie. But in this meane while at *Sardis* aryued Xenarchus, Sonne to the Tyrant, and Friend, as before, to Tymetes, who after intelligence had of Tymetes his death and *Mazeres* his Treacherie, deſirous to be dead with the one & reuenged on the other, attended from thenceforth opportunitie for both: and that ſoe, as the *Lycians* themſelues before their departure might be eye-witneſſes, that euen Death had not yet diſſolued their friendſhip, and ſo how occaſion offered it ſelfe to this enterpriſe.

Aphrodite his ſiſter, that ſhe might there ſpende her teares where ſhee dared to haue ſheade her bloud, her bloud, had (not regarding the daunger of the incamped enemy) eſcaped out of *Sardis*, and amongeſt the *Lydian* Sepulchers was eſpied pitifully to paſſionate her ſelfe ouer the Tombe of Tymetes. Now to reſcue her out of that place and perill, *Mazeres* (that for her loue would haue laboured euen *Dis* himſelfe) deſired Xenarchus his aſſiſtaunce: the match was mate, and only they two, alike weaponed and vnknowne to any, iſſue out of the Cittie to fetch home (as was prētended) *Aphrodite*: The ſelfe ſame day alſo, had Xenarchus ſecretly practiſed the deliuerie of Atys and Abynados out of Priſon, & through a priuy vaute iſſuing out of the Kinges Pallace, conueyed them into ỳ ſubarbes: who not minding raſhly to fall into the handes of the incamped *Lycians*, hay now hid themſelues amongeſt ỳ afore-

ſaide

ſathe Sepulchers. When Xenarchus & Mazeres drew neere to this place, Xenarchus ſuddenly betooke hym ſelfe to his weapon, and to Mazeres, demaunding the cauſe of his ſo doing, he maketh this anſwere. What Mazeres, doeſt thou make a queſtion, as ignorant of a quarrell? or thinkeſt thou a verball ſalue may heale an actuall ſore? couldſt thy loue towardes my ſiſter make thee diſpoſed to my friende? & ſhall not the faith I owed my friende make thee mine enemy? yes, Mazeres, yea: though hetill now I haue diſſembled my griefe for his death, yet, this opportunitie happening, I cannot longer ſuſpend reuenge for his wrong: Howbeit ſo would I be reuenged, that neyther with I to be conqueroure, nor woulde I be conquered, onely that we both dye of mutuall woundes I deſire it, & thou doeſt deſerue it. I know thy courage is haughtie, & my quarell honeſt, be therefore venterous in this as thou art valiant in all things elſe, & condiſcent to ioyne in ſo knight-like a Combate with ſo indifferent a combattant, who ouercomming, or being my ſelfe ouercommed do aſſure thee of this comforte, that thy ſelfe art the laſt man ſhall ſee me liuing, the reaſon hereof (if thou ſeekeſt a reaſon) is, the ſoule of Xenarchus at once laboureth to ſalute the ghoſt of Tymetes, and withall to kepe an Obit to him with thy life by whoſe onely meanes his death was proſecuted, & againſt whom his bloud cryeth vengeance. To excuſe my ſelfe (replyed *Mazeres*) by loue were to accuſe loue of homilde, to argue againſt ſuch your friendſhip were rather to aggrauate your enmitie, & to denye the challenge were to diſtruſt mine owne manhoode: ſo that in excuſing I ſhould accuſe, as I will not, in perſwading I ſhould not diſſwade, as I would, & in agreeing to you I ſhould diſagree with you, as I muſt: but, alas aduiſe your ſelfe better, & deale not ſo outragiouſly with him that friendly, not fearfully beſeecheth you of patience: for if the loſſe of my life might reuiue Tymetes, hee ſhoulde liue: but ſeeing it may not ſo be, then know *Xenarchus* & *Mazeres* is a knight, no Coward, & being inforced to fight, naturally will he rather kill then be killed: when if it ſhoulde ſo proue (as in fight & victorie is vncertaine) that by euill hap

you perish on my weapon, then howsoeuer it pleaseth you to flout me or scarce me with the promised comforte of your death, wherein I should cõceiue nothing lesse than comforte, & wherof againe and againe I intreate you not to inforce the occasion, you may assure your selfe of this cõfort from me, that your dead bones shall more persecute me, than your liuinge bodye can punish me, the one I may not flie, the other I do not feare: the reason is (if you demaunde a reason) if my death bee not the price of your bloud, yeat must I of necessitie forsake *Lydia*, the which to leaue were intollerable, & so forgoe *Aphrodite*, whom not to loue is impossible.

Now when Xenarchus would admit no excuses, others then by combate to diuide the discord, the two Knightes so valiantly charge eche the other, that whilst both strike, both seeme rather to shrinke with the blowes then to shun the weapons, eyther of them shewed inough of courage, neyther of thē were to seeke of cunning, & fret more with scorne to be wounded than feele the smarte of their wounds. In fewe, after many bigge things, Xenarchus, disaduantaging himselfe by his ouerfiercs and desperat fighte, receiued a wounde, wherof he fainting falleth to the earth, and then perswading himselfe of no other hope then present death, he charitably forgaue wofull & wounded *Mazeres* the deede, and constantly imbracing him (indeauouring all in vaine to giue succour) desired to bee conueyed vnto *Tymetes* his Tombe, there to offer vp his last gaspe a sacrifice to his friendes ghost: in performance of which his request *Mazeres* shewed himselfe no lesse dutyfull than dolefull.

CHAP. XLIIII.

¶ Of Aphrodite her moane: Of Mazeres, hers, and the Tyrantes deathes: And of the Restauration of Tymetes his Father to his Kingdome.

WHilst perplexed *Aphrodite* (discheuiled as shee was) washed her louers Tombe with her lamentable teares, he may-

bewayling his vntimely destinie, & esteeming the date of her owne life euer dilayde, lifting vp her flowing eyes, shee espyed Mazeres, supposing that her warres the imbrued bodie of her dying brother: at sight whereof, when weepings gaue passage to words, shee thus lamenteth.

Now woe, and out alas, woe is me forspoken Aphrodite: howe happeth it, my deere brother, that I view thee a second buriall? what see I more? doest thou Mazeres (mischieuous Mazeres) by a new murder adde to my liuing martirdome? if thou, I say, if thou the tormentor of me and Traitor to mine, either in respect of the loue thou pretendest to owe mee, or in reuenge of the hate I protest euer to beare thee, wilt shew me pitie by being pitylesse, for so much as the Gods seeme deafe and not to heare me, and the destinies dull and not to help me, vse once more thy murtherous weapon to dispatch mee of life, that otherwise may neuer bee eased of griefe oh howe aptly in one Tombe maist thou bestow three murthers: leaue not (alas) leaue not hapelesse Aphrodite so vtterly helpelesse, that also present death be exempted her succour.

As Xenarchus (for yet hee liued) with fainting tongue endeuored to pacifie his sister, and acquite his inforced foe Mazeres of his selfe procured death, Atys and Abynados, hyding them selues (as before) amongst the Sepulchres, and hearing those well knowne names, lamentable teares, & the voyce of our crying Aphrodite, partly to assist her, vnto whom they supposed Mazeres to offer force, partly to reuenge the death of the curteous Knight Tymetes, and withall to be mete with Mazeres for their own priuate quarrels, as not a little affrighted at the noyse ran forth to see what had hapned. But when they perceiued their late deliuerer Xenarchus, to lie theare aliue more than halfe deade, and by him standing their late betrayer Mazeres smoking in blood, without any further words, they fearfully ran vpon twise-wounded Mazeres, pitying him with wounds to whome it well pleased to dye: who also being thus spead of his deathes wound, and eyming with his dying eyes to gasping Xenarchus, did with him yeilde vppe the

ghoſt either in others boſome. This new occurrant gaue to Aphrodite freſh occaſion, thus to continue her former lamentatiõ: What? doeſt thou yet liue, Aphrodite (qd. ſhee) longe ſince the beginner, & not yet the ender, or at the leaſt wiſe the fourth actor in this vnfiniſhed Tragedie? deare brother Xenarchus, & (which art deerer to me than a brother) my ſweete Tymetes, content your ſelues, yea a very little whil: be contẽted with theſe waſted teares, the whole remaine that cõtinuall weepinges haue left me, & with theſe colde & cõfortleſs kiſſes, the laſt that euer Aphodite ſhall giue you: Neyther thinke thou *Mazeres*, that I deeme thee bitterly vnworthy my weeping, that (hath vndone vs all) didſt eſteeme me altogether worthy thy woing, I cannot but lament thee, deade, that liuing could neuer loue thee. Which ſayde, beſtowing two kiſſes on ỹ two Coſſes, and two hundred on the watered Marble, that incloſd Tymetes, ſhee ſoothwith entred the Lycian cãpe where careles of her owne ſafety, ruſhing into the Pauillion of the two kinges her fathers enemies, ſhee diſcloſed her ſelfe, & (as much as in her lay) ſtirreth them vp to reueng vppõ her Tymetes his death, Aphrodite (ſaith ſhee) is as deare to her Father as was Tymetes to his, & therefore the reuenge, though it be ſmale, yet it is ſomewhat. In the meane time whilſt ſhee yet ſpake, in came Atis, & Abynados, reporting the pitifull ſpectacle thẽ to be ſeene at the Tombe of Tymetes, to the viewe whereof the Kinges & Captaines hyed, & after them Aphrodite followed. But ſhee perceiuing the gratious father of Tymetes to be ſoe farre of, from ſeeking ſuch reuẽge for the death of his ſon, that he did not only bewaile bitterly the dead bodies of Xenarchus and Mazeres, but alſo ſpake to her ſo comfortably, as if ſhe had beene his owne daughter, being now the rather ouercome with the ſurcharge of this kinde ſorow, ſtanding a while ſpeachles & anon ſinking downe vpon the dead bodies, did (good Lady) without any violẽt act finiſh her life, not vnlamented for, euen of her Fathers enemies. The nexte day three coſtly Pearles were prouided for the three dead bodies, and whileſt the buriall rytes were, with much buſines, in doing at the tragicall

Tombe

Tombe of *Tymetes* (for all they fower were bestowed in one Tombe) the besieged Tirante, not yeat knowing what had had chaunced, as he stoode on the Walles of the Cittie, mused at the greate solemnitie then in hande by the besiegers: But when (after inquirie made) he vnderstoode the same to be the Funeralls of *Xenarchus* and *Aphrodite* his two Children, and of *Maxeres* his fauourett, he presently fell into a desperate frenezie, busiely seekinge in that his madnesse for Weapons whereon to perish. Whereof being preuented, & shut vp safe (as they thought) in his Chamber, the Tyrant, impatient of Life, when all other meanes fayled, swallowed downe his Throate red burning Coales, & after he had languished certaine dayes in horrible languish, dyed to the contentment of all, that lyued to the comfort of none.

Sardis and therewith whole Lydia, after the death of the Tyrant, what through the remissnes of the *Cilician* Garrisons, who being left without a Gouernour would easily admit no Gouernment what through the readie diligence of the Citizens, who gladly laboured to restore their Countrie frō forrain seruitude to wonted freedome and what through the conduct of Atys and Abynados, who in the dead night brought the *Lycian* Armies into the Citie through the same vault wherby them selues had (as before) escaped out of the Citie, was nowe possessed by the good and righteful King Tymætes his father. He now being reestablished in his royal dignitie, did anon with indifferent cares & vpright sentence, dayly determine the Controuersies of his people: to which godly exercise the former wars and troubles did furnish him with more than suffittent of vngodly matter, leauing in manner all thinges in a confused estate: for new Conquestes do abrogate old Customes & where the Soldiour endeth theare the Lawer beginneth. Amongst many other Controuersies and complayntes that came then in question, this one, to be handled in the Discourse following, I esteeme not vnworthy reporting.

Ophelte

Ophelies.

CHAP. XLV.

¶ An occasion of a new storie. Of good and bad magistrates, and of the tedious suites of poore Clyants.

Calamus Septimus.

THe King in walking vp and downe his Pallace, perceiued an homelye Countrey-man, making often proffers to haue spoken some-what vnto him, but euermore fearefull stayed at the tongues ende his purposed wordes: which when the good king had a long time together obserued, him selfe comming to the sillie man, & minding to cut off the bashfull silence of the timerous sutor, spake to him as followeth.

Father (qd. hee) mine owne experience teacheth mee, that the Countrie is ouercõbersome for vs that bee Courtiers, and thy presence in this place sheweth that the Court is ouercurious to you that bee Coontrie-men: howbeit let not our Courtly statelynesse, which we account conuenient for the place, out dashe thy countrie blamelesse, which wee esteeme kindelye to the person but if thou hast any thinge to say, let me then vnderstand who hath wronged thy right, that can will vndertake to right thy wrong.

When the king with this encouragement had set the poore mans tongue at libertie, Philargus (for so was he called) framed his complaint in this order.

Let

Let not my gracious Lord (ſaith Philargus) take offence at the bould intruſion of ſo baſe a perſon, who not finding any one friend to preferre my ſute to your Highneſſe, am my ſelfe enforced to be the preferrer and pleader of a moſt true accuſation againſt a moſt falſe offender, whoſe loftie countenance, being much, doth currie out his lewde conſcience, being nuge. For knowe (gracious Lord) that I finding mine abilitie inſufficient to tee an Aduocate to attempt an Action, much leſſe to bould wage with ſo wealthie a defendant as is mine Aduerſarie, endeauoured by perſonall petition to moue, if it had been poſſible, my owne pitifull cauſe before the pitileſſe Magiſtrates: but (alas) as if diſtreſſed pouerty had been ouer ſmall punihment to me otherwiſe oppreſſed with wrongs, at their very doores I found a certaine ſcornefulneſſe to intect euen their Porters: of whome, after long buſineſſe, and ſome-times a bribe, getting licence to enter the gates, at their Skreenes renewed my ſecond ſute, both coyer for intertainement, and coſtlier for iuſtice, for wanting greater giftes to offer, I found the ſmaller grace to obtaine: what, my Suit? yea both Suit, and ſpeach, & hope to ſpeede: And (which is more) the Seruing-men, Chamberlaines, and Doze-keepers of theſe greate men or Magiſtrates, looking for more Caps and knees, then mine education could readily affoorde, receiued mine obeyſance without regarde of my buſines, yea they that tocke it for a countenance to pluckeoff the bootes of their Maiſter, though it a diſcredit to haue conference with me ſo poore a Clyent. But in thus ſpeking of the baſtard pride of theſe baſe-braue Fellowes being indeed but Waſpes in compariſon of Bees, who though they buz fearefully render ſometimes honny, I may ſeeme in friuilous by-matters prolixious to your Mateſtie. After many loftie lookes, and churliſh checks of theſe bigbing Groomes, leauing the comfortleſſe houſes, I attended my times in the colde ſtreetes: but now alſo, whether it were that I met the Magiſtrates in merrie talke with my betters, my lamentation came therefore of ſeaſon to in-

terrupt their laughters, or that no such thing hayned, yeat the very Pule-keepers would shoulder mee to sceleuce, or if himselfe chaunced to look ouer the shoulder (perhaps offended with my monefull plaints) it was either to dismisse me as if *Bacchus* should answer *Codrus*, or else to direct me frō *Ixion* his Wheele to *Belides* their Tubbes, from himselfe that did terrifie mine eyes with looks, to others that should teare out my hart with Lawe, and yeat in the ende nothing at all done, but I vndone: my purse in all things making to their Lawe, but their Lawe in nothing to my purpose: so that if Hell might haue an Hels-Hell, my selfe Wretch, euen on earth haue suffered that Hell. In the end with importunate plying, some of them shaked me off with the Visour of pitie, appointing a day wherin to heare me, the day past, and the hearing yet, and I feare mee euer to come, & why? Not because I wante matter whereof to complaine, but money wherewith to corrupt: And (O good Gods that men should with such peruish euasions nourish their palpable) errors, because mine Aduersarie is rich and Worshipfull, some make it a consequent, that therefore mine Accusacion is rashe and wrongfull: so that these men, in respect of their mutuall clawing one of an other, are not vnlike Beares, with whom, amongst thē selues, biting is barred, but in respecte of the iustice they should doe vs, not vnlike, to the Beaste *Hiena*, within whose eye is contained a Pretious Stone, which neither they for fiercenesse will depart with, nor we for feare dare attempt to recouer. Thus mightie men speake the word, and all heare them, when we miserable wretches shead teares, but not any helpe vs: our Plaints must be, Should, & Would, because men that are vnder-rule, but their Pleas are, Shal, & wil, becaus men that can ouer-rule: Our greeuous afflictions fatigate dull sences, and tire Capacities, but their golden Dum-showes are effectuall euen to dimme sightes and deaffe eares: one and the same course is in vs dilatorie, in them orderly to vs a Dimission, to them a Decree: for Iudgementes against them haue they Errors with them, for Sentences Re-

preuos, and for Repreeues Pardons. But what, alas, doe we (if we doe aught at all) then seare *Hidras* heades, and sweate in *Hercules* his perils? plucking vppon vs twentie troubles, by proceeding to one triall: and though they eate vs as bread, and sell vs for shoes, yeat vppon whome should we complaine that cureth, or vnto whome that correcteth? the Aduersarie so he may downe right, wayeth not at all the wrong: the Lawyer so he hath a fee, disgesteth the foyle, & fathereth the crime on the cause: the Magistrate he sayth, *Noli me tangere, & angere*, least the incarnate God proous an vntimely Diuell: and, for the most part, none more intollerable than meane men elated to Maiestracie. Thus when all were tried, and I tired, and that they lacked pitie and I likely to perish, I was by good happe aduertised by some, that spake as they spead, to appeale from those officious persons or adiourning Maiestrates, that here not without hire, to the Court & Nobility theare, who heare poore Suitors with more expedition, and helpe them with lesse expences. This aduise made mee hardy, but the accident thereof maketh me happie, in that your highnesse vouchsafeth the hearing of it in your owne person, which I (vnworthy wretch) durst not so much as to haue hoped. Opheltes (most gratious Soueraigne) Opheltes more fortunate to dignities than faithfull in his dealings, is the onlie man giuing occasion that thus I complaine: him being now present in your Court, may it please your Highnes, personally to call to this Controuersie, that, hearing how and wherein I shall charge him by accusation, hee may (I would hee might) cleare himselfe by answeare: for rightfull Causes feare not indifferent Trials. *Opheltes* was then called, who appearing *Philargus* thus proceeded.

CHAP. XLVII.

¶ Philargus *his complaynt against* Opheltes *an vngrateful Vnthrift his sonne in lawe.*

The *Cilician* Tirant lately vsurping in this your kingdom (most gratious Lord) pursuing, for what offence I know

not, the death of this vngeatefull Gentleman, inforced him for saue gard of his life, secretly as a Fugitiue to skulke in euery corner: in his wandring he hapned (vnhappely may I say) on my poore Cottage, vnto whō (vtterly vnknowne to me, and the cloathes on his backe scarcely couering hys bare) I gaue for very pittie such entertainement as my abillitie would thē affoorde: Now, whether it were that despaire to regaine the estate he latelye had forgone made him resolute, or feare to goe farther and speede worser dilligent, or that necessitie made him vertuous, being naturally vitious, I knowe not, but this I founde, that shortly he fetled himselfe with such towardenesse to our countrie Affaires & homely fare, that the best husband man was not more cunning at his worke, nor the woorste Hine lesse choise of his meate, so that finding him more dilligent than a Seruant, and no lesse dutiefull than a Sonne, by the one I receiued commoditie, in the other I conciued comfort: such was poore *Opheltes*, who then did not shame to be my seruant, but such is not prosperous *Opheltes*, that now doeth scorne to be my sonne in law: And yeat though his present Honour hath altered his former honestie, this is the man & the selfe same *Opheltes*, vnto whō, not hauing a Coate to his back, Coyne in his purse, Foode for his belly, or Couerture for his head, I gaue both Apparrell, Monie, Meate, and Harbour. More than so, I haue (ah, rather, I feare me, I had) but one only Childe a Daughter, whō *Opheltes*, long wooed, at length wonne, and with my consent did wedde: howbeit, wretched Wenche, many a lustie youth and rich Frankelines sonne, togethers with her inexorable loue lost their vntogarded labour, only *Opheltes* had the happe to make her an vnhappie Wife. Yea, my dotage extended yet a degree further, so well did I thinke of the man, that vtterlye dispossessing my selfe, I wholie possessed him of mine intiere substance neither did I soone recant what now too late I repent, but for the time was rather tickled with a false ioye, seeing him honestly to encrease his wealth, hartily to intreate me,

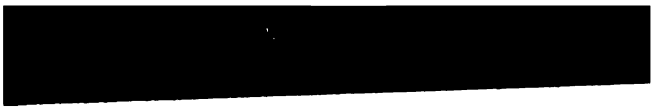
and

and husband-like to use my Daughter his Wife. But no extremitie hath eternitie, as the world turned to better, so this Wretche changed to worser: for no sooner was the Tyrant his Foe deade, and your Maiestie his Friend rescaped of your Royal Diademe, but that hee suddenly made sale of almost all that was ours, that by your Highnesse means and my money recouered his own. Since which time much have we heard of Ophelites now the exquisite Courtizan, but nothing at all of Ophelites ye late expert Carter: pardon me (I beseech your Maiestie) that notwithstanding all other iniuries woulde not thus speake to his disgrace, did he not still prosecute me with Disdaine, which euen wretches disgest not. Theare is in the Citie a stately & secret Courtizan called Phemonoe, a faire dame in countenance, but a foule Diuell in conuersation, abounding in riches, but abandoned of honestie, whose lasciuious daliances (as since my repaire hither I haue been tolde, and my selfe in parte can testifie) hath so farre estranged Ophelites from the duty of an husbande, that it may bee intended he hath not so much as once remembred his Wife vnto whome since his departure, he hath not vouchsafed succor, sight, or sending too. Mine owne pinching neede, my Daughter her pytifull lamentations, and his vnkinde absence from vs both, coused vp mine aged Limbes (vnwieldy god wot for such iournies) to seeke after him whom vnwitting to vs we had lost, & vnwilling to himselfe in the end I founde, if to loose an egge & find a Cockatrice many bee tearmed a finding: for in very troth, Ophelites was so farre off from being founde the same hee lately was, that when he, with many sure lookes, sterne wordes, and scoffing auniswers had dismissed mee this presence, as a dispargement to his acquaintance, I for the time not trusting mine own Eyes, began also to make a doubtful pawse in acknowledging an vndoubted person, vntil at length I perceiued it to fare with mee as with the poore Sparrowe that hatcheth her owne destruction: Wherefore mixing with patience heare this wronge and brooke

noe, the death of this vngratefull Gentleman, inforced him for ſaue garde of his life, ſecretly as a Fugitiue to kulke in euery corner: in his wandring he happed (vnhappely may I ſay) on my poore Cottage, vnto whō (vtterly vnknowne to me, and the cloathes on his backe ſcarcely couering his bare) I gaue for very pitie ſuch entertainement as my abilitie would thē affoorde: Now, whether it were that deſpaire to regaine the eſtate he lately had forgone made him reſolute, or feare to goe farther and ſpeede worſe diligent, or that neceſſitie made him vertuous, being naturally vitious, I knowe not, but this I founde, that ſhortly he fetled himſelfe with ſuch towardneſſe to our countrie Affaires & homely fare, that the beſt husband man was not more cunning at his worke, nor the wooſſe Hine leſſe choiſe of his meate, ſo that finding him more dilligent than a Seruant, and no leſſe dutifull than a Sonne, by the one I receiued commoditie, in the other I conceiued comfort: ſuch was poore *Ophelites*, who then did not ſhame to be my ſeruant, but ſuch is not proſperous *Ophelites*, that now doeth ſcorne to be my ſonne in law: And yeat though his preſent honour hath altered his former honeſtie, this is the man & the ſelfe-ſame *Ophelites*, vnto whō, not hauing a Coate to his back, Coyne in his purſe, Foode for his belly, or Couerture for his head, I gaue both Apparrell, Monie, Meate, and Harbour. More than ſo, I haue (ah, rather, I feare me, I had) but one only Childe a Daughter, whō *Ophelites*, long wooed, at length wonne, and with my conſent did wedde: howbeit, wretched Wench he, many a luſtie youth and rich Frankelines ſonne, togethers with her inexorable loue loſt their vnregarded labour, only *Ophelites* had the happie to make her an vnhappie Wife. Yea, my votage extended yet a degree farther, ſo well did I thinke of the man, that vtterly diſpoſſeſſing my ſelfe, I wholie poſſeſſed him of mine intiere ſubſtance neither did I ſoone recant what now too late I repent, but for the time was rather tickled with a falſe ioye, ſeeing him honeſtly to encreaſe his wealth, hartily to intreate me,

and

and husband-like to use my Daughter his Wife. But no extremitie hath eternitie, as the world turned to better, so this Wretche changed to worser: for no sooner was the Tyrant his Foe deade, and your Maiestie his Friend rescaped of your Royal Diademe, but that hee suddenly made sale of almost all that was outs, that by your Highnesse means and my money recouered his own. Since which time much have we heard of Ophelites now the exquisite Courtizan, but nothing at all of Ophelites ye late expert Carter: pardon me (I beseech your Maiestie) that notwithstanding all other iniuries woulde not thus speake to his disgrace, did he not still prosecute me with Disdaine, which euen wretches disgest not. Theare is in the Citie a stately & secret Courtizan called Phemonoe, a faire dame in countenance, but a foule Diuell in conuersation, abounding in riches, but abandoned of honestie, whose lasciuious daliances (as since my repaire hither I haue been tolde, and my selfe in parte can testifie) hath so farre estranged Ophelites from the duty of an husbande, that it may bee intended he hath not so much as once remembred his Wife vnto whome since his departure, he hath not vouchsafed succor, sight, or sending too. Mine owne pinching neede, my Daughter her pytifull lamentations, and his vnkinde absence from vs both, coused vp mine aged Limbes (vnwieldy god wot for such iournies) to seeke after him whom vnwitting to vs we had lost, & vnwilling to himselfe in the end I founde, if to loose an egge & find a Cockatrice many bee tearmed a finding: for in very troth, Ophelites was so farre off from being founde the same hee lately was, that when he, with many sure lookes, sterne wordes, and scoffing aunswers had dismissed mee this presence, as a dispargement to his acquaintance, I for the time not trusting mine own Eyes, began also to make a doubtful pause in acknowledging an vndoubted persō, vntil at lēgth I perceiued it to fare with mee as with the poore Sparrowe that hatcheth her owne destruction: Wherefore mixing with patience bedre this wronge and brooke



my sake, I returned home to my comfortlesse house. But here (alas) a greater woe had almost bereft mee of my wits, Alcippe, woe am I, my Daughter Alcippe was lacking, and yet still is missing, shee (what else shoulde I imagine) impatient of such causelesse unkindnesse, hath (God graunt my feare be false) either secretly wrought her owne destruction, or else at the best, (which is bad inough) for ever abandoned me and mine house, as the memoratiue Springs that a fresh should flow to her sorrowes: by thus much your Maiestie may conceaue more. If therefore this man his treacherous Ingratitude deserueth to be punished, or my Calamities be worthie of pitie, let then Justice recompence his mallice and relieue my miserie.

Philargus thus concluded, Opheltes coulde not auoyd the accusation, & the king in this wise proceeded to sentence.

CHAP. XLVIII.

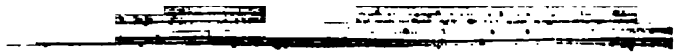
¶ *Ingratitude and disdayne condemned, their Contraries commended, and of man, as he is fleshe, discyphered: with a iust Sentence against* Opheltes.

I Haue (Philargus) giuen eare, and will anon giue ease, otherwise Justice should be lesse, which ought to be so much, than an *Intermedium* to my scepter: for whilst we rule with Justice we are Kings, if otherwise, Tyrants: in what therefore may we better discharge such our Charge, than in brideling the iawes of the mightie Oppressor, and in wiping teares from the eyes of the poore-man oppressed? for mine owne part I haue alwaies carried this opinion, that not to doe Justice to others, is to bring my selfe in danger of Judgement: knowing that the Prince ought to bee the peace of his people, to the Orphant a Parent, to the succourlesse a refuge, to good men a Protectour, to ill men a terror, & to al men indifferent who in respect of the cause should reiect the persō, giuing to euery man that which is his

his, and for this cause are wee appellatiue Gods. Euen this Preamble, Opheltes, ought to bee fearefull to thee that art faultie to thy selfe: sie gracelesse man, sie, doth not almost euerye post in my Pallaice florishe with these sayinges? Doe as thou wouldest be done vnto, Shew pytie to thy Parents, & loue to thy kindred, haue peace with men, and warre with Vices, be faithfull to thy friends, and to all men iust: yeat by so much the more hath thy lewdnesse digressed from these Lessons, by howe much vnlike workes differ from like wordes. But out of a legion will I single a leash, as thine Ingratitude, Disdaine, and Adulteries. If, Opheltes, I maye say him vngratefull that is readie to receiue and carelesse to repaye, and him gracelesse whome the gentle loane of a Friende of a Debtor maketh an Enemie, what may I then saye yll enough to thee, who diddest franklye receaue without loane, but doest falsely requite without loue? forgetting that Curtesies receaued by a tale should be returned in grosse, that to be gratefull for a little is a preparatiue to more, that still to bee thankefull and confesse a benefite, is still to strike from off the skoare with our Benefactours: and in troth, then to render thankes and giue faire speeches, nothing is deliuered with lesser charge, or receaued with greater acceptance.

But certain it is, a second Feend hath brooded this Furie, proud Disdaine, I meane, whome false Honour hath begotten in dishonorable Bastardie: for why, that same honour hath an imperfect or rather a prodigious body, wherein Humilitie is not ingrafted a member, which wanting, Promotion in an euill man is contrarie to Preferment, because rising to Honour hee falleth from Vertue, and dishonourable is Dignitie vsed vndiscrectelye. But to be glorious & not Vain-glorious, to haue power and to want Pride, not with too muche austeritie to prouoke hate, nor with too much alacritie to procure contempt, but in all things to

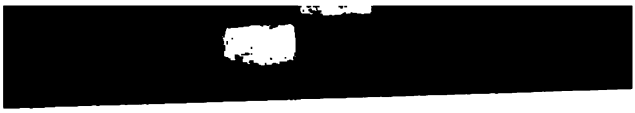
affect



affect a meane, is honourable in respect of the man, and honest in respect of his manners: contrariwise, to haue the best degree and a base minde, the maiestie of a Prince and the manners of a Peasaunt, a conquering tongue and a cowardly hand, much prattle and no proofe, outward grauitie and inward lightnesse, a white heade, and a greene heart, high Authoritie, and vndiscreet gouernement, make Honour monsterous, & contrarie to it selfe. To thee therefore Opheltes, not vnaptly may I allude the Fable of an Asse, who carrying on his backe the Image of Isis, and seeing the people to fall downe and worship, forgetting his holy burden supposed himselfe to be so honoured, & therfore in a brauerie began to yerke out at his Driuer, because as the rest he did not reuerence: but by that time his Maister had wel cudgeled his hide, the foolish Asse could then remember that to Isis, not to an Asse such honors appertained: Euen so (Opheltes) thou that dost carry the Image, but not the Saint, ẏ Visour of honor, but not ẏ vertues of honor, to rebate scō thy vaineglorious conceit in carrying of honorable Titles, art by greeuous correctiō with the Asse to be taught, ẏ worthie titles without vertuous conditiōs are but as Pictures in respect of the persōs. Think not much that I compare an Asse to a Gentlemā, but know that such disdainefull Gentrie is worthy so worthles a comparison. Could Philargus, whom thou hast made poore with thy wrongs, poyson thee with his words? or was his sight to thee a Serpent, by whome thy selfe wert adopted a Sonne? If so (as thou shouldest think nothing lesse thā so) thē neither admitting benefits, & forgetting such aliance, tell mee, Opheltes, is it sufferable thou shouldest be more cruell than a Monster, or lesse ciuill than a man? the fiercest Monster is familier with Monsters of the same kinde, and what art thou for a man that thou shouldest be fastidious of the acquaintance of men? If thy brauerie could not haue brooked his beggerie, at the worst a secreet Reliefe might haue dispatched a bashfull Begger, or if couetousnes hardneth thine heart, yeat diddest thou de

generate

generate from a Nygard, in not shewing a courteous looke, where thou wouldest not bestow a charitable almes, seeing it is vsuall to euery pinche-penie rather to vaile three Bonets than with one halfe-penie to aduauntage a Begger. But (wicked man) Disdaine it is that hath transformed thee from a man to a Diuell, otherwise thou wouldest haue remembred, that neuer any man lost by being humble, or that any euer wonne by being haughty: neither haddest thou forgotten, that as Poore-men haue want to exercise their patience, so Rich-men haue wealth to practise their charitie: which lacking, horrible is that Audiat wherin such a Rich-man is Accomptant. Thou shouldest haue thought (and the rather by thine owne experience) that although we flourish to day wee may fall to morrow, and, as Stage-players, chaunge our parts from the Kinges Scepter to the Beggers Scrip, that the despised may rise, and the despiser may fall: nay admit that Fortune (the common flatterer) should still fauour, yeat what else gaineth the disdainefull person but this, that his superiors point at him in the streets, his inferiours giere at him in corners, his equalles figuratiuely doe ride him, and whosoeuer doth feare him not one doth friend him? the best way therefore to be rich is to despise riches, and the meane to be glorious is to contemne glorie: for he that is neither proude in wealth, nor impatient in want, is poorely rich, and richly poore. As for the pompe of the world and the peoples fauour, it is nothing else then a smoake, and vanishing Ayre, and as Snow beginneth & endeth in water, so man, how bigly soeuer he braue it, began in earth and shall end where he began: seauen foote of ground is allowed to the King, and the like quantitie allotted to the Begger, and both the one and the other putrefie in the graue: though we lacke nothing in sight yet haue we nothing in certainety, seeing all thinges be transitorie, and our selues mortall. Where are the graue Senatours, the wealthy Citizens, the wise Philosophers, the famous Oratours, the valiant Captaines, the deified Princes, and



not, the death of his vngracefull Gentleman, inforced him for ſauegard of his life, ſecretly as a Fugitiue to kulke in euery corner: in his wandring he happed (vnhappely may I ſay) on my poore Cottage, vnto who (vtterly vnknowne to me, and the cloathes on his backe ſcarcely couering his bare) I gaue for very pitie ſuch entertainement as my abilitie would the affoorde: Now, whether it were that deſpaire to regaine the eſtate he lately had forgone made him reſolute, or feare to goe farther and ſpeede worſe dilligent, or that neceſſitie made him vertuous, being naturally vitious, I knowe not, but this I founde, that ſhortly he fetled himſelfe with ſuch towardneſſe to our countrie Affaires & homely fare, that the beſt husband-man was not more cunning at his worke, nor the wooſſe Kine leſſe choiſe of his meate, ſo that finding him more dilligent than a Seruant, and no leſſe dutifull than a Sonne, by the one I receiued commoditie, in the other I conceiued comfort: ſuch was poore *Ophelites*, who then did not ſhame to be my ſeruant, but ſuch is not proſperous *Ophelites*, that now doeth ſcorne to be my ſonne in law: And yeat though his preſent honour hath altered his former honeſtie, this is the man & the ſelfe-ſame *Ophelites*, vnto who, not having a Coate to his back, Coyne in his purſe, Foode for his belly, or Couerture for his head, I gaue both Apparrell, Monie, Meate, and Harbour. More than ſo, I haue (ah, rather, I feare me, I had) but one only Childe a Daughter, who *Ophelites*, long wooed, at length wonne, and with my conſent did wedde: howbeit, wretched Wench he, many a luſtie youth and rich Frankelines ſonne, togethers with her inexorable loue loſt their vnregarded labour, only *Ophelites* had the happie to make her an vnhappie Wife. Yea, my votage extended yet a degree farther, ſo well did I thinke of the man, that vtterly diſpoſſeſſing my ſelfe, I wholie poſſeſſed him of mine intiere ſubſtance neither did I ſoone recant what now too late I repent, but for the time was rather tickled with a falſe ioye, ſeeing him honeſtly to encreaſe his wealth, hartily to intreate me,

and husband-like to vse my Daughter his Wife. But no extremitie hath eternitie, as the world turned to better, so this Wretche changed to worser: for no sooner was the Tyraunt his Foe deade, and your Maiestie his Friend rescazed of your Royal Diademe, but that hee suddenly made sale of almost all that was ours, that by your Highnesse means and my money recouered his own since which time much haue we heard of Opheltes now the exquisite Courtizan, but nothing at all of Opheltes ẏ late expert Carter: pardon me (I beseech your Maiestie) that notwithstãding al other iniuries woulde not thus speake to his disgrace, did he not still prosecute me with Disdaine, which euen wretches disgest not. Theare is in the Citie a stately & secret Courtizan called Phœnionoe, a faire dame in countenance, but a foule Diuell in conuersation, abounding in riches, but abandoned of honestie, whose lasciuious daliances (as since my repaire hither I haue been tolde, and my selfe in parte can testifie) hath so farre estranged Opheltes from the duty of an husbande, that it may bee intended he hath not so much as once remembred his Wife vnto whome since his departure, he hath not voutchsafed succor, sight, or sending too. Mine owne pinching neede, my Daughter her pytifull lamentations, and his vnkinde absence from vs both, rouseed vp mine aged Limbes (vnwieldy god wot for such iournies) to seeke after him whom vnwitting to vs we had lost, & vnwilling to himselfe in the end I founde, if to loose an egge & find a Cockatrice many bee tearmed a finding: for in very troth, Opheltes was so farre off from being founde the same hee lately was, that when he, with many sure lookes, sterne wordes, and scoffing aunswers had dismissed mee this presence, as a dispargement to his acquaintance, I for the time not trusting mine own Eyes, began also to make a doubtful pawse in acknowledging an vndoubted persõ, vntil at lẽgth I perceiued it to fare with mee as with the poore Sparrowe that hatcheth her owne destruction: Wherefore minding with patience to bedre this wronge and brooke

my loſſe, I returned home to my comfortleſſe houſe. But here (alas) a greater woe had almoſt bereft mee of my wits, Alcippe, woe am I, my Daughter Alcippe was lacking, and yet ſtill is milling. Shee (what elſe ſhoulde I imagine) impatient of ſuch cauſeleſſe vnkindneſſe, hath (God graunt my feare be falſe) either ſecretly wrought her owne deſtruction, or elſe at the beſt, (which is bad inough) for euer abandoned me and mine houſe, as the memoratiue Springs that a freſh ſhould flow to her ſorrowes: by thus much your Maieſtie may conceaue more. If therefore this man his treacherous Ingratitude deſerueth to be puniſhed, or my Calamities be worthie of pitie, let then Iuſtice recompence his malice and relieue my miſerie.

Philargus thus concluded, Opheltes coulde not auoyd the accuſation, & the king in this wiſe proceeded to ſentence.

CHAP. XLVIII.

¶ *Ingratitude and diſdayne condempned, their Contraries commended, and of man, as he is fleſhe, diſcyphered: with a iuſt Sentence againſt* Opheltes.

I Haue (Philargus) giuen eare, and will anon giue eaſe, otherwiſe Iuſtice ſhould be leſſe, which ought to be ſo much, than an *Intermedium* to my ſcepter: for whilſt we rule with Iuſtice we are Kings, if otherwiſe, Tyrants: in what therefore may we better diſcharge ſuch our Charge, than in bridling the iawes of the mightie Oppreſſor, and in wiping teares from the eyes of the poore-man oppreſſed? for mine owne part I haue alwaies carried this opinion, that not to doe Iuſtice to others, is to bring my ſelfe in danger of Iudgement: knowing that the Prince ought to bee the peace of his people, to the Orphant a Parent, to the ſuccourleſſe a refuge, to good men a Protectour, to ill men a terror, & to al men indifferent who in reſpect of the cauſe ſhould reiect the perſõ, giuing to euery man that which is his

his, and for this cause are wee appellatiue Gods. Euen this Preamble, Opheltes, ought to bee fearefull to thee that art faultie to thy selfe: sie gracelesse man, sie, doth not almost euerye post in my Pallaice florishe with these sayinges? Doe as thou wouldest be done vnto, Shew pytie to thy Parents, & loue to thy kindred, haue peace with men, and warre with Vices, be faithfull to thy friends, and to all men iust: yeat by so much the more hath thy lewdnesse digressed from these Lessons, by howe much vnlike workes differ from like wordes. But out of a legion will I single a leash, as thine Ingratitude, Disdaine, and Adulteries. If, Opheltes, I maye say him vngratefull that is readie to receiue and carelesse to repaye, and him gracelesse whome the gentle loane of a Friende of a Debtor maketh an Enemie, what may I then saye yll enough to thee, who diddest franklye receaue without loane, but doest falsely requite without loue? forgetting that Curtesies receaued by a tale should be returned in grosse, that to be gratefull for a little is a preparatiue to more, that still to bee thankefull and confesse a benefite, is still to strike from off the skoare with our Benefactours: and in troth, then to render thankes and giue faire speeches, nothing is deliuered with lesser charge, or receaued with greater acceptance.

But certain it is, a second Feend hath brooded this Furie, proud Disdaine, I meane, whome false Honour hath begotten in dishonorable Bastardie: for why, that same honour hath an imperfect or rather a prodigious body, wherein Humilitie is not ingrafted a member, which wanting, Promotion in an euill man is contrarie to Preferment, because rising to Honour hee falleth from Vertue, and dishonourable is Dignitie vsed vndiscreetelye. But to be glorious & not Vain-glorious, to haue power and to want Pride, not with too muche austeritie to prouoke hate, nor with too much alacritie to procure contempt, but in all things to

affect

affect a meane, is honourable in respect of the man, and honest in respect of his manners: contrariwise, to haue the best degree and a base minde, the maiestie of a Prince and the manners of a Peasaunt, a conquering tongue and a cowardly hand, much prattle and no proofe, outward grauitie and inward lightnesse, a white heade, and a greene heart, high Authoritie, and vndiscreet gouernement, make Honour monsterous, & contrarie to it selfe. To thee therefore Opheltes, not vnaptly may I allude the Fable of an Asse, who carrying on his backe the Image of Isis, and seeing the people to fall downe and worship, forgetting his holy burden supposed himselfe to be so honoured, & therfore in a brauerie began to yerke out at his Driuer, because as the rest he did not reuerence: but by that time his Maister had wel cudgeled his hide, the foolish Asse could then remember that to Isis, not to an Asse such honors appertained: Euen so (Opheltes) thou that dost carry the Image, but not the Saint, ẏ Visour of honor, but not ẏ vertues of honor, to rebate frō thy vaineglorious conceit in carrying of honorable Titles, art by greeuous correctiō with the Asse to be taught, ẏ worthie titles without vertuous conditiōs are but as Pictures in respect of the persōs. Think not much that I compare an Asse to a Gentlemā, but know that such disdainefull Gentrie is worthy so worthles a comparison. Could Philargus, whom thou hast made poore with thy wrongs, poyson thee with his words? or was his sight to thee a Serpent, by whome thy selfe wert adopted a Sonne? If so (as thou shouldest think nothing lesse thā so) thē neither admitting benefits, & forgetting such aliance, tell mee, Opheltes, is it sufferable thou shouldest be more cruell than a Monster, or lesse ciuill than a man? the fiercest Monster is familier with Monsters of the same kinde, and what art thou for a man that thou shouldest be fastidious of the acquaintance of men? If thy brauerie could not haue brooked his beggerie, at the worst a secreet Reliefe might haue dispatched a bashfull Begger, or if couetousnes hardneth thine heart, yeat diddest thou degenerate

generate from a Nygard, in not shewing a courteous looke where thou wouldest not bestow a charitable almes, seeing it is vsuall to euery pinche-penie rather to vaile three Bonets than with one halfe-penie to aduauntage a Begger. But (wicked man) Disdaine it is that hath transformed thee from a man to a Diuell, otherwise thou wouldest haue remembred, that neuer any man lost by being humble, or that any euer wonne by being haughty: neither haddest thou forgotten, that as Poore-men haue want to exercise their patience, so Rich-men haue wealth to practise their charitie: which lacking, horrible is that Audiat wherin such a Rich-man is Accomptant. Thou shouldest haue thought (and the rather by thine owne experience) that although we flourish to day wee may fall to morrow, and, as Stage-players, chaunge our parts from the Kinges Scepter to the Beggers Scrip, that the despised may rise, and the despiser may fall: nay admit that Fortune (the common flatterer) should still fauour, yeat what else gaineth the disdainefull person but this, that his superiors point at him in the streets, his inferiours giere at him in corners, his equalles figuratiuely doe ride him, and whosoeuer doth feare him not one doth friend him? the best way therefore to be rich is to despise riches, and the meane to be glorious is to contemne glorie: for he that is neither proude in wealth, nor impatient in want, is poorely rich, and richly poore. As for the pompe of the world and the peoples fauour, it is nothing else then a smoake, and vanishing Ayre, and as Snow beginneth & endeth in water, so man, how bigly soeuer he braue it, began in earth and shall end where he began: seauen foote of ground is allowed to the King, and the like quantitie allotted to the Begger, and both the one and the other putrefie in the graue: though we lacke nothing in sight yet haue we nothing in certainety, seeing all thinges be transitorie, and our selues mortall. Where are the graue Senatours, the wealthy Citizens, the wise Philosophers, the famous Oratours, the valiant Captaines, the deified Princes, and

amiable Ladies? are they not all conuerted to vnſauerie Donghils, or vtterly conſumed to duſt? doe they not feede wormes in their Coffens that breed wormes in their carcaſes? looke into their Sepulchers whether it be poſſible to diſcerne the Maiſter from the Slaue, the Rich-man from the Begger, the King from the Subiect, the Champion from the Coward, the Ladie from the Beldam, the foule from the faire, or one from an other. If ſuch be our end, as ſuch it is, if our felicities heere be generally ſubiect to Caſualties, and our fleſh in the graue ſuffereth indifferently Corruption, with what reaſon then doe wee deſpiſe thoſe through Pride, betwixt whome & vs is no difference in the pit? ſauing that the poore leaue not behind them like contentions for their heires, or carrie with them like pampered Carcaſes for the wormes, nor commonly like bangers for their ſoules: becauſe vnto whome moſt is committed by him moſt is omitted, howbeit with him it is moſt reckoned: when if the account fall not out euenly, what doth it aduantage to haue liued in delices & dignities? when that which is mortall ſhalbe tumbled into a hole, and that which is immortall be tormented in hell: wheare the iſſue ſhall be not of Riches but of Righteouſnes, not of coſtly Decking, but of charitable dealing. Thus ſeeſt thou Ophelies, that in proſperitie to be ſecure is dangerous, but at any time to be diſdainefull odious, that honour ſtandeth without humilitie, that humilitie teacheth a man without ouerſight to haue of himſelfe an inſight, and that in a poore man it is gratefull, in a rich man glorious. It reſteth now of thine incontinent life, wherein I will vſe breuitie, becauſe the ſame wickednes is generally had in ſuch deteſtation, that ſhould not I reproue it the beaſtlineſſe of the fact it ſelfe might impugne it, for who is he that wanteth a parramtorie condemnation againſt a violator of marriage? Wherefore to conclude, ſeeing (*Ophelies*) that the now calme ſpreading thy ſayles in the broadeſt Seas may not incite thee to gratitude, neither the paſſed Storme that inforced thee to

except

creepe vnder Philargus his Lee dehort thee from disbaine, nor yeat the dishonour pursuing the offence deter thee from adulterie, that I may therefore amend by Iustice what is helpeles by intreatie, this is my Sentence: That *Philargus* (in lieu of his losse) be presently possessed of the one halfe of all that is thine, and the rest to be confiscate at my pleasure, vnlesse within one yeare next thou safely bring foorth *Alcippe* thy wife his daughter, wherein fayling, to thee I adiudge perpetuall banishment.

Poore Philargus, foorthwith enioyed the benefit of this sentence, and the King finding by further conference & tryall, that he neither wanted Gentrie to match with his grauitie, nor yet discretion to deale in matters of estate, after a short time aduaunced him to high Offices in publique gouernment: In whome (then profiting with double praise, that is, by wisedome, which euermore commendeth it selfe, and Authoritie, which vnto whome soeuer it hapneth wise or witlesse neuer wanteth fauourers or at the leastwise flatterers) was verefied this saying, wisedome without riches and authoritie is as a Diamonde raked vp in a Donghill. It followeth now that somwhat be said what in this meane while became of Alcippe, and also what afterwards befell to her, Opheltes, and Phæmonoe.

CHAP. XLIX.

¶ Of the rare constance, and patience of *Alcippe*: Opheltes his dotage on a harlot, for whom he would haue foredone himselfe. The loyaltie of a Wife, and leuetie of a Curtizan.

Immediatly after that Philargus was (as before) departed from home to seeke after Opheltes, Alcippe for the same cause left also her fathers house & came vnto *Sardis*: wheare vnderstanding of her husbands common haunt to Phæmonoe, shee got her selfe by meanes into her seruice, that so, at the least, shee might behould him by stealth, whome onely she ought to haue held by right: often (good

ſoule) did ſhe inwardly deuoure her teares with patience (a rare patience, and in her ſexe a blacke Swanne) whilest ſtanding vpon her owne vnworthineſſe, and to her ſelfe ſeeming ouer ſimple a wife for ſo ſurlie a husband, ſhe neither durſt hazard to diſcloſe her ſelfe, nor yeat was ſo happie as to be acknowledged of him, for a Fly was not then an Eagles flight *Ophelies* not ſtouped but to *Phemonoe*: as for *Alcippe*, being in his eie but as a Cipher in Auguriſme, ſhee might come to him vnregarded, and paſſe from him vnremembred: yeat wanted ſhee not patience to ſuffer his vnkinde prankes, nor diligence to further with her Miſtreſſe his vnwarranted paſtime, yea ſo farre as &c. extended: ſo that contenting her ſelfe with part and not contending for the principall, ſhe ſticked not vpon the Subſtance, but was ſatiſfied with the ſhadow, *Phemonoe* had the game, *Alcippe* naught elſe but the gaze: all which (in reſpect of the neceſſitie) ſhee did gladly view in ſilence, as dreading otherwiſe to looſe the aduauntage of that ſorrow.

But when (as is before ſaid) *Philargus* had brought *Ophelies* in diſpleaſure with the King and diſcredit with the people, and that his ſurfited Prodigalitie was throughly purged with a remeleſſe Vomit, it came to paſſe that *Phemonoe* her loue did ſuddenly labour of a Conſumption: his new want diſabled him to pay his ſhot, and her ould wont diſallowed him to runne on the ſcore, yea and that with ſuch contemptuous copneſſe and vnkinde diſdaine did ſhe handle him, that had not will vtterly ouer-ruled his wit, euen ſuch her entertainement might eaſily haue allaied the heat of his inordinate paſſions, and ſtaied the frenzie of his madding dotage. The which notwithſtanding, the miſerable man (& the more miſerable in reſpect of this his diſallowable affection, than in that beggerie had brought him on his knees, and the King his ſentence of banishment ſtood preſently vpon execution) would by no repulſe ſurceaſe to houer, where by no requeſt he might be ſuffered to ſeaze.

Now with the increaſe of his lawleſſe deſire, enſued the decreaſe

[redacted]

[redacted]

[redacted]

infallable) that the fauourable Aſpect of no Planet hath been qualifieng to the luckles Starre of my Natiuitie, & therefore haue I found all fortunes preuailing to the drift of this Cataſtrophe: an end (in deed) baſe & beaſtly, when the matter thereof is Luſt, the meane a Strumpet, and the manner a violent ſtopping of mine owne breath. But what ſhouldeſt thou longer liue (Opheltes) hauing ſo good an opportunitie to performe the prodigious execution of thy Deſtinie, and by one death to end infinite ſorrowes?

In ſaying this, and whileſt he reſolutely ſtriues to haue ſtrangled himſelfe, by good hap in came Alcippe, Shee eſpying the melancholy pretence of her miſerable huſband, and ſeeing the diſpaire whereunto he was then falling, with bapored eyes offereth this kinde dutie to the onely Seruiſman of all her ſorrowes, ſaying.

CHAP. L.

¶ *Alcippe* her kindnes and good aduiſe to *Opheltes*: and more concerning his dotage.

IT is (qd. ſhee) contrarie to man-hood, euen in extremities of euils not to be patiently conſtant, but wilfully peeuiſh and peruerſe is he that forgoeth comfort whileſt he forſaketh counſell: although the man be learned foole-hardie that dareth to followe the aduiſe of a woman, yeat beleeue me (Opheltes) as it is not incredible but that a Mouſe may gnaw a Lion out of ginne, ſo is it not impoſſible but that I may at the leaſt giue intermiſſion to thy griefe. Long did I practiſe thy cure, but therein performe no other then mine owne care, in preferring thy bootleſſe loue to mercileſs Phæmonoe: but I nowe finde, and I would thou couldeſt alſo feele, that longer to bleed of that vaine, is to leaue thy body bloodleſſe, thy head witleſſe, and thy friends hopeleſſe of thy recouery, what meaneſt thou, Opheltes, to ſtraine out a gnat and to ſwallow vp a Cammell? tearming her vnreaſonable

in

in hating thee so deadly that loueth her so dearely, and not espying thine own greater madnesse, in louing her so dearely that hateth thee so deadly. It might haue suffised for a rebuke once to haue intermedled with a Curtizan, and for a reproch great enough that so bad a woman should blush at thy companie, without thus dying a Reprobate, by still doting in thy passed and purposed wickednesse: leaue of therfore, if not for shame, yeat to auoyde sinne, and know that then are the gods seuere in correcting when men are secure in offending: yea (if for nothing else) yeat therefore should Opheltes be weaned from lewdnesse, because Phœmonoe is wedded to lightnesse, thou wert not her first choise; neyther shalt thou be her last change: for the loue of an harlot is not so tied to any one, but that the same lieth open to euery one, Beggeres and Banished-men excepted, and thou being in the same predicament, art therfore under the same Exception concluded. wherefore it is meere follie in thee to looke for other of custome, or to hope for better of courtesie. But whilest our wordes be not plausible, our counsels seeme not profitable, and with strong reasons to resist loue, were, perhaps, to laboure my selfe mad with reason, For such loue (if I may so mis-tearme lust) as it is easier receceiued, so is it hardlier disgested than the Taint Boresses, that swallowed a Mite swelleth a Monster: if therefore, Opheltes, thou wilt not disclaime in Phœmonoe, it resteth then that Phæmonoe be reclaimed to thee, which to contriue asketh more than necessarie cost, for kindly it is for such Hawkes to soare from an empty Fist: but Opheltes lacketh, will you say, and is therefore helpeles, but Alcippe liueth, do I say, be not therefore hopelesse: she liueth, in deed, to profit thee with a triple benefit, that is to restore to thee thy liberty, and to recouer for thee the moitie of thy liuing, to which only Rise is Phæmonoe in sequens. Admit therefore Alcippe to stand thee in this steede, whose patience, I know, is so liable to thy passions, that to worke thee a second delight, she will endure be it a second diuorse,

At the naming of Alcippe did Ophelites ſigh, and turning his face letteth fall plentie of teares, making at the length vnto her (whom not yet he knew to be Alcippe) ſuch anſwere.

The tydinges (ſaith he) are moſt ioyfull to *Ophelites* that Alcippe is yet liuing, but ſeeing it is currant in each mans mouth, and alſo confirmed in mine owne minde, that my falſhood towards her doth rather merit a moſte ſhamefull death then the acceptance of ſuch vndeſerued aſſiſtance, I am much more prone to ratifie the former doome by mine owne handes, than apte to receiue the latter grace by her helpe: wherefore I beſeech thee to declare to Alcippe, that dying I wiſh vnto her all good fortune, whome only I haue made altogether infortunate: but knowe that thy counſell as touching Phæmonoe is like to an after-ſhowre that falleth when flowres and rootes are alreadie withered, I am determined to die, and my determinatiõ ſhall not be changed: for why? to liue vnexiled & wealthily ſhould be much leſſe pleaſing to me, than to die from inward vexation and outward infamie: Onely be aſſured (gratious Damſell) that I account this the laſt, and not the leaſt of my miſeries, not to be able to recompence thee for thy paſſed and preſent kindneſſe, for the which the heauens graunt thee what I, beſides thankes, haue not to giue thee.

CHAP. XLII.

¶ How *Ophelites* was reclaimed from his folly: Of the Harlots end, and of the commicall Euent enſuing.

ALcippe not a little diſcouraged at this willfull anſwere of his, as her laſt refuge made her ſelfe knowne to her huſband, whome with hartie teares ſhe intreateth to vſe her, if not as a wife (of which name ſhe ſaid her ſelfe vnworthy) yet at leaſt-wiſe, as an inſtrument to diſcharge him of the kings Sentence, and as the meane whereby to

recouer

recouer his extended landes and ſuſpended liberti e.

To be ſhort, Opheltes, now acknowledging her, ſeemed confounded with ſhame, and in concluſion being wholy conquered with the conſideration of her ſo rare patience, pollicie, conſtancie, and (which was not inferiour to the reſt) her beauty, confeſſed his falſhood, repented him of his folli e, craued pardon for both, and vowed following loyaltie, and herevppon from wondering and weeping fell they to kiſſing and imbracing.

In which meane while, Phemonoe (by euill aduenture) entered the place, who perceiuing their mutuall teares, and admiring their vnuſuall familiaritie, (whether it ſeemed offended therewithall, or fearing leaſt Opheltes, after the time preſcribed for his baniſhment, being taken in her houſe, might ſo turne her to damage, or that ielouſie, frenzie, or malice incenſed her ſo to doe) railed ſo out of meaſure vppon Opheltes, and fared ſo roughly againſt Alcippe, that (after much ſufferance) he not able longer to endure the one or other, (his Melancholie being now conuerted to Choler) whileſt ſhe thus perſiſted to outrage, did in his furie ſtab her to the heart, of which wound ſhee preſentlie died.

Immediatelie after the deed done Opheltes was apprehended, who as principall, and Alcippe as Acceſſarie, were brought before Philargus, then being in great Honour and a Iuſticer in *Sardis*: who vnderſtanding of the fact, & (with griefe ynough) knowing the offendors, becau e hee would not be thought ouer-forward in doing iuſtice againſt Opheltes, neither too ſlack a Iuſticer in reuenging the death of Phemonoe (both, as before, his enemies) but chiefly becauſe nature would not ſuffer him to ſit in Iudgement againſt Alcippe his owne and onely child, with an heart therefore melting with ſorrow he diſmiſſed both Priſoners his preſence, procuring their cauſe to be determined by the King in his owne perſon, Philargus (good old man) in the meane while, by ſo much the more ſuſpending his ioy in that he had found his Daughter, by how much the more he fea-

red to looſe her againe, being now to be arraigned of murther. But the matter being thus brought before the King, vpon the ripping vp of all circumſtances, the death of Phemonoe was thought worthie her diſhoneſt life, Opheltes, & Alcippe were acquited by the king, and he receiued againe into fauour, Philargus is made a ioyfull father of Alcippe, Opheltes is reconciled to him, and inriched, and euery thing amiſſe was thencefoorth amended.

But that I may now reduce your memories, and retire your eares to the hiſtorie whereof I principally intreat, that is, of the cauſe and euent of Atys and Abynados their Queſt and trauels, you are to remember that Arbaces the old *Meade* & his Companiõ, leauing behinde them in their place Sorares & his *Aſſirians*, are (asbefore is ſayd) eſcaped out of the barren Iland, from whence they ſafely ariued at *Sarmatia* and from thence againe, as pitying the diſtreſſe wherin they had left Sorares his companie, & for their deliuerie they are alreadie reſapled to the barren Iland: vnto whom, and to Sorares, Atys, and Abynados (whom we are now to ſhip from *Lydia*) happened as followeth.

(*)

Arbaces

Arbaces.

Pars Calami primi.

CHAP. LII.

¶ How Atys, Abynados, and their Followers, being in queſt of *Semires*, are taken Priſoners in an Iland: and of the Crueltie purpoſed againſt them by *Dircilla* the Gouerneſſe of the ſame Iland. &c.

After that Atys & Abynados had made long aboade in *Lydia*, hauing receaued great intertainment & Giftes of the king, they ſhippe themſelues & their companie, chiefly directing their Courſe towardes *Sarmatia*: but as they had no abſolute knowledge there to finde thoſe perſons for whome they ſought, ſo in this their ſayling they did not preciſely obſerue any direct courſe, but entred now and than into ſuch adiacent Seas, Creekes and Chamels, into which likelyhoods, profit pleaſure or neceſſitie did carrie them: So that in riding vppon the floud *Tanais*, which doth deuyde the *Scythians* from the *Sarmatians*, they coaſt by a verye pleaſaunt and delectable Iland here did they Lande their men, in purpoſe to haue then taken in freſhe water and other prouigion. But farre had they not forraged from their ſhippe, diſorderly roming (as vnſuſpitious of that which hapned) whē the Ilanders, who

from the next mountaines had eſpied their ſeruall, lying a great number in ambuſhment, had ſodainly incloſed them in on euery ſide, their barbarous darts and weapons for the moſt part bearing (to the great terror of the *Aſſirians*) the bloody tokens of ſome very late ſlaughter.

What could the *Aſſirians* now doe, or rather what did they not that valiant & courageous men ſhould haue done? many they ſlew, and ſome of them were ſlaine: but in the end, the multitude of the Ilanders preuailed againſt the manhood of the *Aſſirians*, who being thus captiuated were anon committed to bands, and then brought before the Gouerneſſe, or rather Goddeſſe of thoſe Ilanders. For ſuch was the ſuperſtitious error of the people in thoſe idolatrous dayes, that whoſoeuer had extirped Tyrants, ciuiled Nations, confounded Monſters, or elſe by prowes, wiſedome, Inuention, or by any extraordinarie good, profited any cõmon Wealth and Countrie, the ſame, liuing, was magnified for more than a man, and dead canonized a God: By this meanes therefore it came to paſſe, that thoſe Ilanders had alredie in deuotion deified their Gouerneſſe Dircilla: for ſuch as was Pallas to the *Gretians*, and Iſis to the *Egyptians*, ſo and ſuch was ſhee to this people: and albeit yeares (for now was ſhe aged) had wrought a naturall decay in her beautie, being yet more then ordinarie, neat neither place, time, nor troubles had ſo impaired the Maieſtie of her lookes, or impugned the magnanimitie of her heart, but that, armed much to the *Amazonian* faſhion, ſhee ſeemed more warlike then Penthiſilea, or rather more terrible then Bellona her ſelfe. In ſuch wiſe iſſuing out of her portatiue Tent, after ſhe had twiſe or thriſe ſhaken her preſull Launce, in ſigne of her vnappeaſable furie againſt the *Aſſirians*, ſhee left vnto the wretched Captiues the ſame comfort, as if they had preſently beheld the head of Meduſa: & as the fiercenеſſe of thoſe her lookes had ynough of feare, ſo the deliuerie of theſe her wordes had nothing of hope.

Ye (qd. ſhe, to the Ilanders) the bands, and captiuitie

of

of theſe vngratious people ſufficient (thinke you) to warrant your ſafetie? or haue I pleaſure (ſuppoſe you) to ſee their bodies yet breathing, vpon whoſe ghoſts alſo, were it poſſible, we ſhould doe execution? Was I yeſterday deceaued in thoſe *Aſſirians* whome I commaunded you to execute, as the Eſpials of ſome other their Accomplices? or thinke you by interepting of them and theſe you haue diſappointed their Confederacie? no, no, be ye aſſured that the expedition of their Treaſons doth not only conſiſt vpon theſe two Companies: eſtraiſe therfore all haſte ouer litle, vntill you haue mingled their blood with that of thoſe others their Explorers: otherwiſe it will come to paſſe, and that before you looke for it, but no ſooner than I (experienced of their treacheries) feare it, that theſe Rouers and Robbers of the whole world, being by their tyrannous countrimen (alreadie perchaunce at point of their arriuall) reſcued out of our handes, ſhall ſtand them in no ſmall ſtead to the cutting of your throats, and the conqueſt of this our Iland. Haue you forgot how yeſterday, euen the ſentence of death could not pluck downe the courage of their Companions? and why? forſooth reaſon had they to hope that expected this helpe, and marke you not alſo how the carelleſſe countenances of theſe our Thrals argue not ſo much a contempt of death, as the like hope that their armed Confederates are alreadie marching to their reſcue once againe therefore, I ſay, let your haſt in putting them to death, cut of their hope in purpoſing vpon lifes of life ſaid I: yea & hauing made a maſſacre of yours, and pray of your Countrie, to ſuruiue you in the one, and ſucceed you in the other.

To Atys, Abynados, and to the reſt, this her Sentence ſeemed no more ſeuere, then to be charged of Conſpiracie with before executed *Aſſirians* ſtraunge: but therein to haue been guiltie or not guiltie was all one, it ſufficing to Dircilla her wrath and their deaths, onely that they were *Aſſirians*, vnto which people (the occaſion why hereafter following) ſhe had vowed her ſelfe a deadly enemie.

CHAP. LIII.

¶ Of the commiſeration of the Ilanders had towardes the captiue and condemned *Aſſirians*, and of *Sarares* being founde of his *Sonnes*.

WHilſt ſhee was yet ſpeaking, diuers of the Ilanders (as purpoſing a generall ſlaughter) in great furie ran to a Caue not far of, and anon returne, rigorouſly driuing before them certaine *Aſſirians*, whom the day before they had taken forraging in the Iland, and of whoſe deaths Dircilla their Gouernaeſſe had before giuen them in commendement. But the Ilanders, being naturally pittifull, altogether vnacquainted with ſheading of blood, and dwelling as it were in a world by themſelues, had neuer till then ſeene Ship or Stranger: & therefore, had not the fierce words & wrath of Dircilla more preuailed, then the inhumanitie or malice of thoſe harmleſſe people, the *Aſſirians* had not only not been aſſailed and captiuated, but alſo, ſuch admiration did their beautie and brauerie ſtrike into the hearts of the idolatrous Ilanders, that eyther they had eaſily beleeued them to bee Gods, or at the leaſt-wiſe durſte not haue made proofe of their manhoods: But Dircilla commaunding, whoſe words to thē were as Oracles, they feared not to enterpriſe, were it neuer ſo rare or great an Aduenture: only herein (as moued with compaſſion) they had borrowed of their vſuall obedience in that they had not, according to her commaundement the day before done execution vpon thoſe firſt-arriued *Aſſirians*.

Wherefore Dircilla, contrary to her thought, ſeeing thē yet liuing whoſe death ſhe had commaunded, one while fixing her froward eies vpon the miſerable Captiues, & anon caſting her frowning lookes vpon the Ilāders, after ſhe had with ſharp reprehencions rebuked them of diſobedience, & reproued them of fooliſh pitie, & that her words had nowe made them altogether as pittileſs as her owne purpoſe was cruell,

cruell, ſhe cauſed both the firſt & laſt company of the *Aſſirians* to aſſend the toppe of a ſteepe Rocke, from whence to be ſloung downe headlong, was the death wherevnto they were all iudged by this angrie Virago.

Great was the generall lamentation that the *Aſſirians* then made, and no leſſe the admiration that either company had of this their heauie and vnexpected meeting, and that amongſt ſo barbarous a people howbeit of all this time on neither parte was acquaintance taken, for they all ſeemed ſtrangers one to another. Anon, as the friend imbraceth his friend, and eche man encourageth his fellowe with patience and conſtancie to leaue his life, and as Arys and Abimadoe plie them now to one place & then to another, ſtill with godly exhortatiõs ſtrengthening the fainting courages of ſome their fearefull Countrymen, amongſt the firſt ariued *Aſſirians* they eſpyed Sorares their Father: But, alas, the manner of this their diſmall meeting was ſo much the more lamentable, by how much the more the ſame might haue ben ioyfull, had the not been croſſed by this miſfortune. There might one haue ſeene the Sons to want all tokens of gladneſſe in ſaluting their Father, & the Father furniſhed with all ſignes of heauineſſe in entertaining his Sonnes and the ſkilfull Painter in making a ſeuerall Counterfeit to euery ſorrowfull countenance, either ſhould haue been growned in varietie, or elſe haue paſſed more then one Agamenon vnder a vale bemoning the death of Iphigenia: Yea ſo pitifull were the confuſed cries and this doleful Spectacle, euen to the Flanders themſelues, that moued with cõpaſſion, they made no haſt at all to do execution, as was the ſtrere commaundement of their Gouerneſſe.

Now Dircilla, only conſtant in her crueltie, & the father when ſhee perceiued the miniſters of her wrath thus ſuddenly enclined to mercie, being ſet in a double chaufe, did ſingle out from eyther company of the *Aſſirians* twoo of the moſt aged perſons: and then (hardly with houlding her Kniues from their faces, & her Launce from the boſoms of her

owne

[redacted]

owne people) vſed theſe following ſpeeches.

CHAP. LIIII.

¶ How Dircilla, offended with the Ilanders, proſecuteth her reuengefull hatred againſt the *Aſſirians*. &c.

HOw farre off (fooliſh and vngratefull people) I am euen from any tyrannous thought, whereof it ſeemeth you haue me in ielouſie, the ſelfe-witneſſe of theſe two auncient Murderers may happily fit me with a ſufficient purgation: for as I perſwade my ſelfe that all *Aſſirians* generally are fleſhed with blood, ſo I eaſily coniecture that theſe two, in reſpect of their yeares, ſhould be parties, or at the leaſt wiſe priuie to thoſe murthers whereof I ſhall nowe ſpeake: yea, although a godleſſe life hath cõmonly a graceleſſe end, yeat it may be that theſe old Homocides (whome if you ſhall ſpare, a naturall death will ſhortly diſpatch) wil at the laſt penitently confeſſe what at the leaſt I perticulerly eryeſſe: But if it fall out againſt my gueſſe, yeat either ſhall I make the very name of an *Aſſirian* odious in your eares, or by reporting my iuſt quarrell proue my ſelfe guilteleſſe of tiranny. Omitting therefore to be curious as touching the treacherous ariuall of the *Aſſirian* armies into *Media* my native countrie, vnder conduct of their butcherous Emperor Ninus, it ſhall ſuffice that my weeping eyes ſomwhat caſting my heart ſhall anow licence my tongue to touch with what beſtiall cruelty they ouerran their bloody Conqueſt. Theſe mine eyes beheld the royall Pauilion of king Farnus my Father conſumed with fire, which way ſoeuer I looked the countrey abrode was all a flame, here might I ſe an heape of *Meades* newly ſlaughtered, there the *Aſſirians* to perſeuer in fleying, this Villain murdereth a Matron ouer the dead body of her ſonne or husband, that Ruffen haileth by her faire haire ſome noble Virgin to rauiſhment, death, or captiuitie, one ſundereth the impotent

ould

old-man in ſporte, an other ſlaieth the ſtrong-membred young man in diſpight: yea in euerie corner was ſuch murdering, ſacking, captiuating, racking, rifling, & horror what not? that death ſeemed leaſt damage that y poore *Medes* then ſuſtained. If the rehearſal of this common Calamitie will not ſuffice, I haue alſo a particuler complaint againſt the *Aſſirians* who (then in which they might not haue perpetrated greater cruelitie) hauing purpoſely made the King and Queene my parentes eye-witneſſes of the moſt miſerables condition of their Subiects and Signorie, did alſo, euen in their ſighte, murder ſeuen young Princes their children and (leaſt in any one thing they might ſeeme not to haue outraged in tyrannie) with the luke-warme bloode of the children they mingled alſo the blood of the Parents leauing mee of their fruitefull iſſue the onely Remaine. But more then this, and (who was fullie as deare or dearer to mee then Parentes, Brethren, or Countrie) in this bloodye buſineſſe I loſt by death or Captiuitie, I wot not which, Duke Arbaces my huſband, who not long before had made mee a Mother of an vnfortunate Sonne. Alſo when the *Aſſirians* ſhoulde depart, mine hermefull beautie procured my ſhipping towardes *Aſſiria*, for why? the Emperour had in his purpoſe appointed mee one of his Concubines: with which purpoſe of his I, deſolate I, became ſo perplexed, that frō thencefoorth breaking truce with my patience, I was rather to ſeeke of a deſperate practiſe then a conſenting will to haue periſhed: inſomuch, that the Motherly care of my Babe, then hanging on my breaſt, had not bapled mee from death, if a worſer occurrant had not withſtoode ſo an good occaſion for by the commaundement of Aſcolanta the Empreſſe (being nowe enuious of my beautie, and waxing iealous of her huſbands liking) I was all alone ſet a ſhoare in this Iſlande, by which meanes I alſo ſaw-me at my ſweete Infante, and vntill now my deſarts more (as appeareth) then your deuotions haue giuen me here intertainement. It is not vaine-glorie (I ſpeake not now to theſe *Aſſirians*, whom

I worthily maligne, but to you the Inhabitants of this Iland, whom vnworthily I haue profited) that mooueth mee thus to vaunt deserts, but your owne vnthankfulnesse that will not value my merits: for meete though it bee, that you vouche the heauens for the matter of your wealth, whereof you long were ignorant, yet amisse were it not, to vouchsafe mee a prerogatiue in the manner and vse, as first deliuered vnto you by mine inuention. I founde you without Gods, without Religion, without Lawes, or Gouernment, naked, wild, brutish, and beast-like feeding on Rootes, harbouring in Bushes, fearefull of your owne shadowes, and to discribe you in a word, Monsters wrapped in man-like habbites: but in these through mine industery you haue now Reformatiō and were it not that prouender doth prick you, & fulnesse make you loolish, only you might be said an happie people: & that, ywis, not so much in respect of the naturall pleasure, & plentie of this your populous Iland (through a terrestriall Paradise) as in y mine experience and plat-forme hath warned you, and might haue armed you, from the Incursions of these Tyrants, the common Skourge to all people: against whom (not without cause as you haue heard) my tongue long since hath proclaimed deadly Foade, neither, in seeking reuenge, shall mine heart breake Couenant with y diseased ghostes of my murdered friendes. But (on Gods name) bee it so, that neyther *Media* for example, my selfe for merits, the *Assirians* for their mischieuts, our lawe for iustice, you for dutie, nor I for authoritie, be it so, I say, y none of these haue that waight of argument to wyn you reuenging Instruments, to wreake my teene vpon these Tyrants yeat at the least-wise be prouident for your own safetie, and preuent your owne euilles, by punishing these your apparant enemies: of whome the question is not, whether they all haue iumped vpon one diuelish Attempt, that is, the conquest of you & your Countrie (all circumstances directly approuing such consequent) but because according to the minde of the offendor we are to measure offences, & for that there

there may be mercie in punishing, and crueltie in sparing let vs see whether of the two, pittie or punishment, is in this case more requisite. If this offence of the *Assirians*, had been committed through ignorance, infirmitie, provocation on our part, through rashnes (for sometimes rashnes and such like infirmities are in some men as sicknesses) if privately against one, or a fewe, or by your knowne foes, then I deny not, but that mercie might have borrowed of Justice: but I will clere them (as men that will not offend but in the highest degree) of these petite faultes, and charge them with capitall crimes. They (least herein they should degenerate from *Assirians*) of pretended mallice without matter, have hoysted their sayles to forren windes, & used their unpeaceable weapons against unknowne people: not for Enmitie, but for ambition, not ignorantly by chaunce, but advisedly by counsell, not rashly, but resolutely, not against some, but against all, not because you deserue war, but because themselues be impacable: yea had not I forewarned you, as hauing had triall of their trecheries, you should have felt their wounds before you could have feared the words & after they had glutted themselues with Slaughters, Rauishments, Sacrileges, Burninges, Spoylings, and all kinde of mischiefe, the Ruines of your Iland, should not have priuiledged the Suruiuours of you from their intollerable Slauerie. If this much, which might suffice for me to charge them, and for you to correct them bee yet insufficient, then haue I also Reason & Honestie Coparswadors hereof Reason, I say, because better a few be punished thē that a multitude should perish: & Honesty, because in ý you may and will not, you take vpon your selues the Offence of the Offendors, and betray the good whilest you boulster the bad: for Impunitie is the Springe of Carelesnesse, the Mother of Insolencie, the Roote of Impudencie & the Nurse of al Transgressions. For shame therefore, Sirs, inchaunt your harmefull pittie, and remember that not to correct is to consent to the Crime: Better it is that I remember you of

the perill, then you expose you of your pitie, for if you staye untill Experience (the Philosophie of Fooles) hath taught you what I haue tolde you, then, to your costes, you shall finde that the *Assirians* be men enimies to mankinde, not to bee made your friends by Compulsion or Composition whose enmitie commeth of Custome, and not by occasion: euen this disgrace, if they escape, that their liues and liberties were in your power to dispose is vnnaturall for their stomackes disgesture, so impossible a thing is it to reconcile an heart hardned with pride and malice to honestie. But what? is it decent that I pleade before mine owne Vassaile? that I intreate as a Subiect whome I should commaunde as a Soueraigne? my sufferance, I fee, is cause of your stubbornesse, & my curtesie of your contempt. At my first comming when I might haue had adoration as a Goddesse, I was not then so hautie as to take it, and now that I should haue obedience as your Gouernesse, you are not so humble as to giue it: thus deale you with mee as did the Froggs with Iupiters Rafter, you make mee a Stocke, but beware these Storks. And truely, seeing you haue not deserued why I should be longer carefull of you and your welfare, & for that by disobedience, you will needs inflict vpon your selues so grieuous a punishment, I also giue my consent (a reuenge too great I confes) that these our Captiues be anon deliuered to their ships that being insufficient of them selues, they may inuite from *Assiria* the destruction and ruine of you, your wiues, your children, your goodes, and your whole countrie: for enough haue the Assirians seene in this our Ilande, to allure hether multitude of Inuadours.

CHAP. LV.

¶ Of the speaches of one of the singled out *Meades*, on the behalfe of the condemned *Assirians*.

These

THeſe her wordes had now ſo much incenſed the minds of the Flanders againſt the *Aſſirians*, that euerie of theim was clearely reſolute in the death of his Priſoner: but for that one of the two old Captiues, whom Dircilla had (as before) ſingled out, & whom her wordes had now eſpecially touched to the quicke, was ſuddenly bereft his ſences and ſaine in a ſowne. And for that the Flanders ſtoode vppon expectation of ſome further confeſſion to be deliuered by the ſecond old-man, who was alreadie, in way of anſweare to Dircilla, entred into ſome and theſe following ſpeaches, therefore vntill hee ſhoulde end, the determined ſlaughter receiued a ſecond adiornement.

I proteſt (qu. this aged man) by whatſoeuer God hath care of vs and this Countrie, by the Sunne, and the holy Fire of *Caldia*, and as euerie of theſe ſhall in this life comfort my withered Carcaſe, more fit for the wormes then the worlde, and doe good to my ſoule, when it ſhall leaue the wearieſome priſon of this my body, I ſhall (Lady) as touching that wherewithall we are now charged, vtter all that I knowe, and know all to be truth I ſhall vtter. For my ſelfe therefore I ſaye, that moſt true and too true it is, that the *Aſſirians*, then conducted by Ninus, committed ſuch & the ſame before remembred outrages, ſlaughters and ſpoiles in *Media*, neither were you deceiued in gueſſing ſome of vs to bee priuie or parties to that buſines, whereerein (to ſay truth) my ſelfe was no ſmall part, but how? not (alas) as a Spoiler with the *Aſſirians*, but as a ſufferer with the *Meades*, for *Media* is the place of my birth, *Aſſiria* only of mine aboad. And for theſe *Aſſirians*, mine owne companie I meane, I ſay, that not charging them with the faults of their Anceſtours, or any further then wherein them ſelues be guiltie, you, but eſpecially yours, haue greater cauſe of kindneſſe, then of any crueltie. For proofe and better credit whereof, beſides my former proteſtation, ſomewhat it is (whom ſince my hether comming I haue not heard named) that I knowe you to bee Dircilla, wife and Ladie to the Duke Arbaces but

more, that I the ſpeaker of theſe words am Orchamus' bro-ther vnto the ſame your huſband and more then ſo, the man vnto whoſe care, when ſuddenly at the commandemēt of the Empreſſe you were snatched frō out you Cabben, you com-mended your yong Sonne, ſaying: Ah good Orchamus, if thy fortune proue better then the deſtinies of all thy friends, be a parent to thy poore Nephewe, whom with more griefe I leaue an Orphant then to haue ſeene him buried: I well remember the wordes, and me-thinkes I yet ſee thoſe very weepinges which pearced mine heart at this our lamenta-ble ſeperation. Since which time (Dircilla) I haue not on-ly been carefull to anſweare the ſame your truſt, but alſo, beyond expectation, I found Fortune & opportunitie therin aſſiſting: For no ſooner was the *Aſſirian* Fleete arriued at home, but that Ninus (not a litle diſpleaſed at your loſſe, the which by the Empreſſe, and her miniſters was ſmoothlye cloaked with a colourable excuſe) but that Ninus, I ſaye, cauſed your Sonne to be nurſed and nurtured with prince-like attendance and in time, when of greater credit & cou-rage or a more notable Captaine then was Sorares amongſt the *Aſſirians*? But in the returne of the imperiall Nauie from the *Bactrian* warres, by occaſion of a ſudden tempeſt then happening, Sorares your Sonne, and all the company aboorde his Shippe were loſt from the reſt in the Sea *Caſ-pium*. Now when this heauie newes was bruted at *Nini-uie*, I, Atys, and Abynados, his two Sonnes (for hee hath made you a Grandmother of theſe twoo Gentlemen) and theſe other, his, & our friends, vowing our ſelues in his con-tinuall Queſt, haue three yeares alreadie trauailed manye Countries and Seas to finde out Sorares: through occaſion whereof, as alſo to take in freſh water and other neceſſaries, and not vpon anye ſuch purpoſe as you pretend, we are arri-ued in this Iland, and lo, ponder-ſame (he pointed to Sora-res) is the man ſo ſought, but vnluckely here found, if find-ing him we looſe our ſelues and with the end of our labours make alſo an end of our liues.

CHAP.

Arbaces.

CHAP. LVI.

¶ Of the other singled-out *Meade* his speaches: & an vnexpected ioyfull meeting then discouered, &c.

AN few, what with this talke, and other more effectual tokens, Dircilla being brought to her Creede, and left in *de profundis*, rather musing at their meeting, being so straung, then mistrusting the matter, being credited, or euer shee might imbrace Sorares or reply to Orchamus, was intrerupted by the seconde Old-man the other of the two singled-out Captiues who in ioyfull extasie, suddenly clapped her (frowardlye disdayning his imbracinges, as not yet cooled of her former chaufe) betwixt his braune-fallen armes: But when hee sawe her lookes, not vnlike to those of Proserpina newly rapted by Pluto, it entered thē his thought, that rashly to iest with edg-tooles might proue daungerous: wherefore, charming such his kindnesse, hee anon founde oportunitie thus to chaunge her coynesse.

I giue place (sayde he) to the time, not to Dircilla, whom these armes (pythlesse though they mowe bee) once coulde naye often did, not violently, but willingly, imbrace (may I so blabbe) euen in the bedde of Arbaces. Blush not, Dircilla, blushe not, the sport was lawfull, howsoeuer the reporte maye seeme ouer liberall, and if (for pouertie parteth friendes) you disdaine to acknowledge suche acquaintance, yet at the least for Arbaces his sake deale mercifullye with these your Prisoners. As for my selfe, coulde I pleade no other protection then that I am olde enough to feare death, it mighte suffice: but neyther did I hope so well as I haue here founde, neyther doe I feare so ill as I am here threatned. Orchamus (for so your countenance promiseth a consent) hath a Arcadie founde grace because hee ie brother to your husbande Arbaces neyther doe I make it a doubt,

but

but that Sorares ſonne to Arbaces an pou is alike deare to either parent & of the ſaffetie of Atys & Abynados his ſonnes, naturall loue I preſume tendereth a warcantize: but nowe generally and briefly as touching all theſe other *Aſſirians*, my ſelfe (Dircilla) wil be their Borrow if Arbaces his Baile may deliuer them of their Bandes.

To make ſhort tale, Dircilla now hearing and ſeeing ſufficient to the acknowledging of her huſband, vnable then to moderate her ſudden ioy, and in reſpect of her peares and whom euen now ſhee ſeemed vnlike to her ſelfe, ſheer lightly claſped Arbaces (as redie to embrace as to bee embraced) betwixt her arms who mutually mixing their ioyfull teares with louing kyſſes, were eyther of them long time bereft ỹ vſe of there tongues: of which pleaſant paſſions Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, and Abynados were alſo glad Coparuers neither were by-ſtanders, aſwell *Aſſirians* as Flanders, exempted for idle Inſpectors or euill appayed Accours in this ioyfull Accident.

After therfore more then a litle ioy on all ſides ouer-paſſed, by reaſon of this happie meeting, wherin (after many peres, & euerie perſon ſeuerally ſcattered in a ſundrie Countries) the Huſbande had recouered his Wife, ſhee her Huſbande, both their Sonne, hee his Parents, him his Sonnes, hee them, the Brother his Brother, the Kinſman his kindred, and the Friend his friend and (which more is) after extreme miſeries attaining to ſuch inſpeakeable ioyes, yea & at that inſtant when nothing was leſſe hoped for then life, after (I ſay) this ioyfull meeting, the Priſoners were all ſet at liberte, and bountifullye feaſted by Dircilla and her Flanders: And then euery of the *Meades* ſeuerally reported what had befallen them ſince their chaſing out of their Countrie (as before) by Ninus.

First Arbaces toulde of the tragicall arriuall into the barren Iland, and how he and his fellow, ſurviuing the reſt, after they had been long ſhut vp there in great miſerie did deliuer themſelues from thence (as in the beginning of this

booke

Booke is remembred) in the ship of Sorares, whom then or before this very time he knew not for his Sonne: then showeth he of their safe arriuall and good intertainement in *Sarmatia*, from whence, hauing obtained a ship and men, as pittying ye distresse wherein they had left Sorares and his *Assirians*, & for their deliuery they resailed to their barren Iland: then lastly how they had no sooner taken Sorares & his miserable souldiors aboord, and put their ship againe to the Seas, but that a sudden storme droue them perforce vpon that same pleasant Iland, wherein this their ieoberdious ioy thus happened.

Sorares, Atys, & Abynados did (in effect) no other then itterat ye former report of Orchamus: & now was it come to Dircilla her turne to speake, whose words, containing a more pitifull, profitable, and pleasant discourse, then a curious deliuery, thus follow.

CHAP. LVII.

¶ *Dircilla* reporteth her first landing and terrors in that Iland, with other matters not vnworthy obseruation.

When, Arbaces, the Mariners had landed & left mee postalone in this Iland, the day was far spent, & my wits almost at an eb: thē was thy name rife in my mouth, & (though also in vaine) the extinct names of my dead parents and brethren: yea mine eyes with feare, & my heart with loue, did both twain follow those enuious Sailes wherby Sorares my sonne, then an Infant, was carried Captiue into a straunge Countrie from me his helplesse mother and when mine eyes might no longer accompanie him through distance of Seas, yet did my heart ariue with him euen in *Assiria*. And with fresh supplies did sorrowes confusedly succede sorrowes, being in number so great, & in nature so grieuous, that one of my then passions might haue set twenty toungs a work, one of these toungs haue cōstrained a milion of eies to teares, & the least cause of those teares haue killed ye wepers hart: neither did it alone suffise that I thus sorrowed for things past, but I also feared a world of woes not vnlikly to haue followed. Here perceiued I a pleasant Iland, but my vnmanured

as might seeme) of people: retire back I could not, goe forwards I durst not, behind me raged in the wide seas, before me mustered the wild Desertes, & on eyther side heard I the vnacquainted noyse of dreadfull Monsters: and yeat (troth to say) I lesse doubted the fiercenesse of onye Monster, that could but deuoure my body, then the falshood of men (if any were) that might haue abused my beauty. For, besides that mine Attire (not vnbeseeming the daughter of Farnus) was then very gorgious, & mine age (I being then in the flower of my youth) answeareable to my Attire, my beauty also (though I say it) was then sutable to both: in commendatiō whereof, thy self (my Arbaces) diddest in those out altian days, affect ouer-much the figure *Hyperbole*, & with the Ilanders here was ẏ same not a litle effectuall to wyn me fauour: but this braue brag to such as now here me, and did not then see me, may no doubt seeme as false, as in deede foolish, yet doe I speake it in this place where erre I cannot without controulment. These feares, I say, & a thousand like fantasies thus occupying my thoughts, suddenly I heard a borsterous rushing amongst the next boughes, foure of these Ilāders anon disclosing themselues vnto my view: euery of them held in his right hand a cragged Dart, & in the left a great quātitie of raw flesh. At sight wherof whē, not meanly affrighted, I beheld howe guttonously they crammed downe their Mawes the same flesh, yet reaking in their teeth, and howe their Chaps, beards, breasts, armes, hands, and whatsoeuer griffie part of them leaues had left bare were al be-smeared with blood, though death was then the least of al my feares, yet (beleeue mee) the crueltie prefigurated by this sauadge Spectacle did strike to my heart such incomprehensible terror, that if, at the least, sorrowes had not bereft me of sence, in comparison hereof the sufference of a simple death had ben no death, or in no part so dreadful. Now, whilst I apply this horrable president to feede my new feare, & rather dreaded then doubted that anon their imbrewed hands shold seaze, & their rauinous teeth tire vppon mee, and I so to receiue an

vn-

vnnaturall buriall within their bowels, the barbarous people had espyed out me: who then, as Deare newly brought to the stand, with Countenances indifferently inclining to admiration and feare, stood a great while aloofe off at gaze: Anon seeing me to approch them neare & neare, after many Satirlike freakes, with nimble feet & swift flighe, they fled away into the nearest woods, wildly boulting through the Thickets, and with incredible felicitie mounting and dismounting the sharp and steepe Rockes, then (a strange and preposterous course might it seeme, if not in so desperate a case, that the Hare should followe the Hound) as I fearing pursued the flying, with purpose, at last by falling into their hands, to haue died from such miseries, in casting my eye aside, I perceiued y Cace and carcase of a Beare, the which these men had newly slaughtered, & vpon whose dismembred limbes (as might seeme) I had euen now seene thē feeding. This fact of theirs as it seemed to participate a fearce and bestiall courage, so such their food did argue in them o defect of humane conditions, & both it, and whatsoeuer else I here beheld presented ouer skathefull sighes to me, euen now so wealthie & wanton a Lady: Thus hitherto did I salute penury at the Threshold, seeming to me an intollerable hansel. But whilst I thus lingered a dying life, Nigh', the discomfortable Register and Remembrancer of all miseries, had taken place of the opposite, & ouershadowed all this Countrie: then fleeted many thoughts in my mind, not only present ieopardies but also of passed ioyes & by how much more nise and delicate education, or to be exact from so royall parentage made once to happinesse, by so much more penury & distresse added now to perplexitie & impatience: for what thing can happē more vnkinly, then ỳ pleasant & good causes should vary in peruerse & bad effects: or what leane wee with more grief, thē what we possessed with most ioy? I that lately had al or more thī I could redily aske, could not aske now any one needfull thing I might possible haue, but as in better times I had superfluity wō supplies, so in this change

I ſuffered neceſſity with decreaſe: Beggers know in what, & by whom to be relieued, but (alas) euen beggery did by ſo much more better mine infortune, by how much more I neither knew to beg, nor ſcũd of whõ to receiue, & (wherof Beggers are not reſtrained) it lay not in my choiſe to make chãg of y place, whatſoeuer in charity I found in the people. But by that time y torture of two or three of theſe daply terrors & nightly torments had racked Vertue frõ Neceſſity, I tryed this Croſſe both poſſible to happen, & found the ſame in euẽt profitable. For as the Horſe late pampered vp at the full mãger, & anon turned out to graſing, doth not willingly forſake his bare paſture againe to returne to his ſweete Prouendor, ſo I, (although my ſufferance came at firſt by cõſtraint, yet cõſtraint growing to a cuſtome, & cuſtome to a cõfirmation of patiẽce) did the liberty of theſe Woods as a Superfluities againſt the World: yea when my Fleſh was mortified & my Spirits quickned, I could thẽ cõſider, that Vertue & Riches ſeldom couple in one body: and when I was ſo far ſecluded frõ the vain delights of the world, y neither mine eies might ſee thẽ, mine eares heare them, nor my heart hope for them, I thẽ eaſily deuerted frõ the Compoũds of Educatiõ, & reuerted to the Simples of Nature: & in ſo needy a life I remẽbred my naked birth & cõceiued the like of my graue. Thus profit we in diuine Vertue, when we decay in humane preſumptiõ & herein only differ we from brute beaſts, that they naturally know not themſelues, but ſuch ignorãce in vs worketh vnkindly to brutiſhneſſe. Now, credit me, Arbaces, all ſemed thẽ vain which before time I had in moſt value: for I remẽber (& I thinke the world is as it was) that in our Heades, Heare, Habbits, & behauiours, Variety ſo ſquared out Faſhiõs according to our own Fãtaſies, that whilſt nature ſeemed a Dotarde & Art an Infãt, too-bad became a Brauery: that our faces ſo borrowed of Phao his Hor, that, the intereſt exceeding the loan, Beauty with ſome became Banquerupt: & our Feete (proud Fooles) ſo troad on the earth as if earth diſdained to touch earth: But ſmile I muſt to remember, howe ſome with a Paſke, a Scarfe, or a Plume, could as formal-

ly

ly kepe their old or black & bad faces frō sight, as did others their beauty from Sun-burne: neither could ought bee tollerated in yong, faire, & noble Dames for their prerogatiue, ẏ was not anon taken vp by old, foule, and meane Drosels for pride: so that wee be cōming May-ladies, they would anon cōuerfeit Maid-marians: & yet these Apes in purple, in our fashiōs, gate, & nicenes, followed vs in nothing so effectually, as did some men effeminately: whose lockes were so lyke trimmed, beauty so tēded, & all their ornaments so womanlike tēpered, that only to haue taken their Rapiers frō their sides, & then to haue giuen them Fannes in their hands, had been altogether to resemble (with whom they did altogether desemble women. This did I then remēber, & the vanities therof seemed most ridiculous: alas, wold I think to my selfe (that sometimes was as nice as ẏ nicest) with what foolishnes frequent we our bodies to costly balmes & curious ornaments, which after after a few daies Death presēteth to the Graue, & the Graue to the Wormes? & why are we remisse & carelesse in beautifying our soules, fit presents for the Gods themselues, with incorruptable vertues. If (more thankfully be it spoken, thā the same was then accepted) aduersity wold offer vnto other the oportunity to cōtemplate & consider of ẏ World as was & is alotted to me, Beauty would seeme Vanitie, the lesse it Riches the recouerie of quietnes, a Rāsome from Fortune, & a discouerie of our selues shold appere to our selues: no other thē Exāples of weaknes, Spoiles of Time, the Game of Fortune, Patterns of incōstancie, Receptacles of misery, Marks for Enuy, in conception loathsom, in birth helpelesse, in youth witlesse, in age wretched, of life vncertaine, of death sure. Therefore should we behaue our selues here, not as though we liue only for our bodies, but as though we could not liue without bodies: neither shold we so follow ẏ world, that we also fall with ẏ world, which being ours we are not our own. But hitherto haue you not heard how I fell in with these Ilāders the order whereof I shall now tell you.

CHAP. LVIII.

¶ Shee declareth how, and in what conditon shee founde

 those

those Ilanders at her first comming: and by what meane she reformed them, and became their Soueraigne.

These considerations (my Arbaces) at the first vrged of necessitie, & then vsed as necessary, besides ẏ place it selfe which seemed a second *Elysium*, or of pleasure & plenty Nature her Store-house wherin ech Hill might seme a *Parnassus*, ech Valley an *Edon*, ech Groue a *Tempe*, & ech Water a *Tagus*: & more-ouer (which did not a litle delight) with these ẏ people also, ẏ nimble Lads of this Iland, who (if we grant their then Attire & wildnesse, & from these other except their Goate-like Members & Mãners) seemed right Fani, or Satirs: or rather, in respect of their personages, (might not the Comparisõ seeme Sacrelegious to his Dietie) in steede of Darts, arming them with bow & quiuer, such as was sayde lustie Nomius in ẏ fields of *Thessalie*. And what shal I speak of mine own Sex? whose louely faces were such as you now see, & whose beautyfull bodies (because I descried them litle better thẽ bare) had the discouery ben yours, might perhaps otherwise delighted your wantõ cies: beleue me, in Nimphs like were their faces & fashions, that whether it were in beholding ẏ calme seas that they tripped on the Shoare, they semed such as are reported ẏ Nereides, or ẏ they sloung thẽselues into some pleasant Fountain, they resembled ẏ Naiades, or that they kept the airesome Mountaines, they represẽted the Oreades, or that amõgst Woods, casting thẽselues into a ring, they daunced their Roundeloes, or gathering sweete Gayes, they decked themselues with Flowers, or ẏ they couched their white sides on ẏ soft Hearbs, in these also they might haue been taken for the Dryades. By assistance, I say, of these that is, Patience, Time, Place, People, and this swete & vnthreaned Liberty (the only remembrance of thee Arbaces & of Sorares, my son excepted) I made not only resistance for the time, but at length a final cõquest of Fortune: And hauing secretly & sufficiently obserued ẏ harmelesse mãners and dispositions of these people, & in al things reformed my selfe to their fashions, when oportunitie serued,

I fell-in with the rest, & behaued my selfe so formally that (no one suspecting to the contrarie I was taken for an here-breede Ilandresse. But by this meanes chanced my Credit & Authority. Hauing thus by little & little crept into acquaintance, after a while (as moued so to doe by reason of my colde attier & coulder lodging (more naturall to them then vsuall to me, albeit both to them and mee tollerable ynough, because then this Climate may bee more temperate) I hapned one Euening, a great number of the Ilāders being thē presēt, with a Flint-stone to strike fire, & therewithal to kindle an heape of sticks & other drie matter: but lo (a thing vnthought of) they who neuer before had seen Fier, but supposed ye same to be some miraculous Accident presētly deriued from the Sonne (which they worshipped for their God) as people therefore rauished of their sences, & holding both it & me in reuerent admiratiō, they offer diuine worship which I refusing, by many familier instaunces informed them in this & other matters: so far-forth neuerthelesse aduaūtaging my self by such their superstitious inclinatiōs, as in their Religion, vnciuile maners, dyet, apparell, dwellings, prouision, & such like might tend to the easier Reformatiō: in which thing I dealing with them by degrees & according to their Capacities, did in time profit them to more ciuile Perfection: And then, whereas they beleeued me a Goddesse, I remoued also that profitale Error, but might not renounce the Gouernment of them and their Countrie which charge, with a generall consent, would I or would I not, they haue cast vpon me,

CHAP. LIX.

¶ Of their generall Resolution after this their happy meeting.

AS Dircilla thus parled, & whilst the Riualles sat yet banqueting is her Bowers, they discryed a great flame assending from out the Sea, whereof Arbaces, desirous to know the reason, was thus answered: that certaine of the Ilanders, ignorant of that that was hapned, finding his sheepe in the Harbor, had fired both it and all therein, being a great Masse of treasure with whith neuies Arbaces, seeming much disquieted, was in conclusion by Dircilla thus appeased.

Ouer-

Ouer-passed damages, qd. she, haue made me prouident of following dãgers, & therfore (albeit at this time ignorãt of this action, wherin thy presẽce, Arbaces, might haue haue been a countermaũd to our Custome) generally before time, as cõcerning ẏ *Assirians*, haue I cõmanded such burnings & ambushmẽts as a thing profitable to our peace, & in performãce easie, & to that end continually haue maintained watches in euery our Costes: by which means no Reporter hath allured hither Inuadors, & our own people, keping within their own bounds, remaine vncorrupt of strang maners & practises. But, alas, what meaneth Arbaces this thy troubled countenãce for thy burnt ship, as thou wouldest resaile without mee, that in this place haue vowed my buriall? to those white heires of thine, & to one so vnfortunatly crossed of ẏ world, deligtfull rest should, me-thinks, seeme more agreable thẽ doubtful trauels. If thou, being thẽ a Prince & yong, couldest not in *Media* auyod ẏ *Assirian* tyrãny, if the Treasure frõ thence trãsported into the bariẽ Iland, causing such effusion of blood, & in ẏ end only possessed of two, had no vertue because no vse, if after thine owne deliuery, in waffing also frõ that imprisonmẽt Sorares thine vnknowen son & his companions, ẏ seas ruled thy sterne, & the storms were thy Pilots, if I say, in youth, in age, in wealth, in want, on land, & on sea, thou hast experẽced such incertainty & perils, & lastly if after al these, ye & that whẽ no other thẽ a foule death was expected, thou hast recouered thy wife, thy son, thy sonns childrẽ, thy brother, & with thẽ a Kingdom, yea a kingdome for pleasure matching Bœotia, & for profit comparabl to ẏ best part in *Nabathia*, why thẽ doest thou not renoũce those old perils & rest contẽted with these new pleasures? of which though 3. parts be wãting, yet, beleue me Arbaces a cõtẽted mind is better thẽ a kingdom, & the world is at ẏ best but a Parasite. This she saide, & Arbaces, hauing alredy assented in himselfe, did easily consent to her, as one not so much turned by words, as tired with the world: whe, as also Orchamus, Sorares, Atys, Abynados, & al the *Assirians*, esteme thẽselues rapt vp into ẏ third heauen, so inspeak was ẏ ioy of such their meeting, & the pleasure & plenty of this their Iland. Here therfore to conclude, those whom I found in Charons Boats I now leaue in Iupiters Boosome.

FINIS.

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

APR -3 1946

APR -3 1946

MAY 15 '64 H

251-888

Syrinx, or A seavenfold historie,
Widener Library 003815337
3 2044 086 919 313